

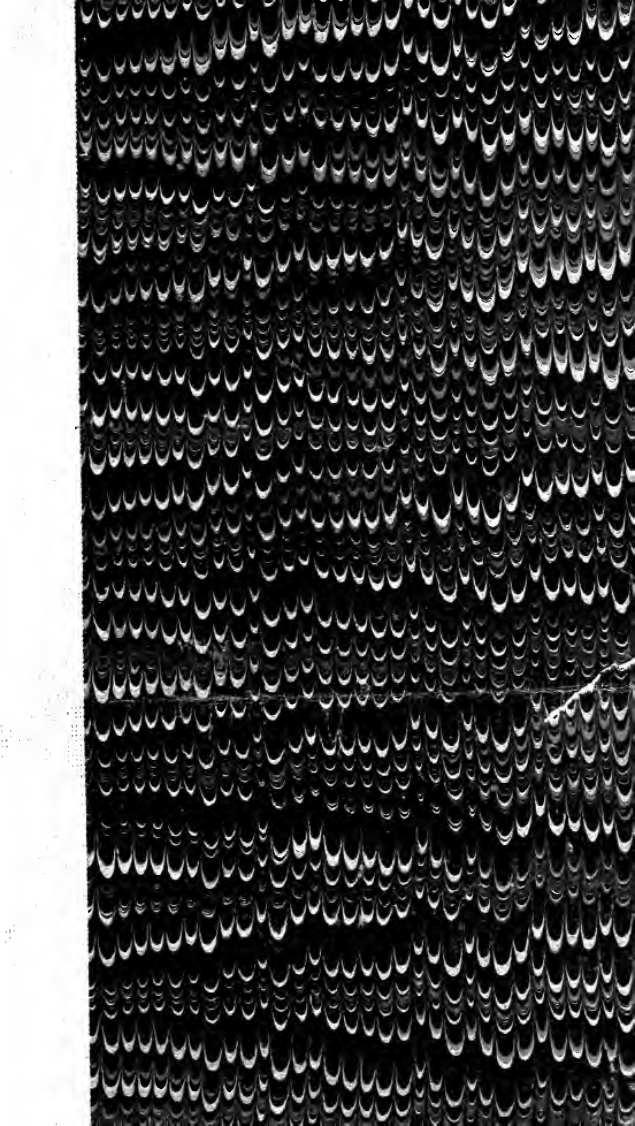


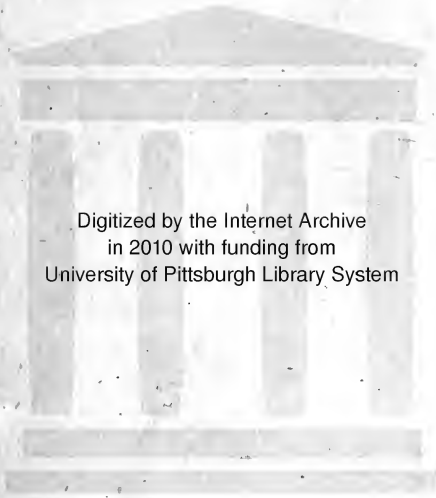
UNIVERSITY
OF PITTSBURGH



Dar.
PQ1997
A7E5
1745

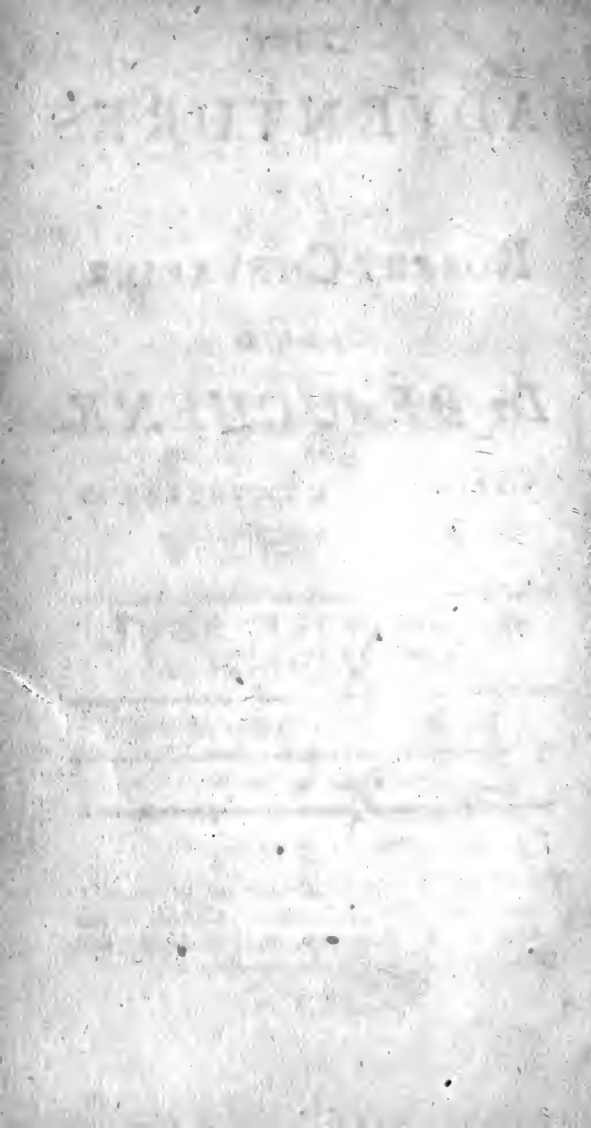
LIBRARY





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
University of Pittsburgh Library System





THE
ADVENTURES
OF
ROBERT CHEVALIER,
CALL'D
De BEAUCHENE.

CAPTAIN of a PRIVATEER in
NEW-FRANCE.

By Monsieur LE SAGE,
Author of GIL-BLAS.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

L O N D O N :

Printed and Sold by T. GARDNER, at *Cowley's-Head*, opposite *St. Clement's Church* in the *Strand*; R. DODSEY, in *Pall-Mall*; and M. COOPER, in *Pater-noster-Row*.

M,DCC,XLV.

THE

LIBRARY

OF THE

CONGRESS

OF THE

UNITED STATES

OF AMERICA

WASHINGTON

1854

NO. 1

1854

1854

1854

1854

1854

1854

1854

1854

1854

1854

1854

1854

W



T H E

Bookseller to the Reader.



HE Chevalier de Beauchene, Author of these Memoirs, after having passed near fifty Years in the Service of the King, as well by Land as Sea, came into France with a considerable Fortune; but the Passion he always had for Play soon threw it into Disorder, not to mention some Affairs of Honour, which his violent and hasty Spirit occasioned him, and which could not be accommodated but at the Expence of his Purse. He lost above two Thirds of his Fortune at Brest, at St. Malo, and at Nantes, and went with what was remaining to settle at Tours. It was in that City, that falling into a Quarrel with some of the English there, he fought with them the 11th of December, 1731, and found in that Combat a Death which he had so often braved with Impunity in the most dangerous Attempts.

*At those Hours, when his Madness for Play permitted him to employ himself in other Amusements, he was pleased with sitting down to write the Events of his Life, and with recalling to
his*

The Bookseller to the Reader.

his Memory all the bold Exploits he had undertaken, and all the Dangers he had undergone ; next to the Joys of the Bottle, this was his darling Pleasure.

Another Motive also excited him to this Work, which he looked upon as useful to Society ; he imagined that the World would be obliged to him for that Infinity of minute Details that he has given of the Rencontres in which he commanded ; for according to his Notions, a Captain of a Privateer, nay a common Master of a Ship, ought to have the same Prudence, Courage, and Address, in the Conduct of their Affairs, as an Admiral has in his.

Soon after the Death of Monsieur de Beauchene, a mutual Friend to his Widow and to me, writ to me from Tours, and let me know that he had perswaded that Lady to suffer these Memoirs to be printed which her Husband had left. In effect, she soon after sent them to me, desiring me to publish them, if I thought them not unworthy of the Curiosity of the Publick. I have perused them, my gracious Reader, and judge that they contain what may be agreeable to you. As to the rest, if in some Places you find the Stile a little too rough, and too much upon the Marine, remember that it is that of a Privateer.

CON-



CONTENTS

OF THE

FIRST VOLUME.

BOOK I.

The Origin of Monsieur le Chevalier de Beauchene, and the Amusements of his Infancy ; at seven Years old he is carried off by the Iroquese, where he is adopted by one of those Savages. His Occupation whilst with them. He is retaken some Years after by the Canadians, and restored to his Parents. He associates himself with some of the Algonquins, and goes with them upon several Expeditions. After having put to Flight a Body of four hundred Men, raised the Siege of Port-Royal, and obliged five thousand English to retire, he quits his Algonquins, and turns Privateer. He goes a Cruize upon the Coasts of Jamaica, under Captain Morpain, and afterwards

C O N T E N T S.

wards under the famous Montauban, after whose Death he is elected Captain.

B O O K II.

The Chevalier de Beauchene refuses to accept of the Post of Captain. He goes again to Sea with seventy-five Privateers. They meet with four English Vessels, who use them very roughly. The Chevalier goes to St. Domingo, to join some French Privateers there. The gallant Adventure of a Rocheller, one of his Companions. They go to cruize upon the Coast of the Carraccas, and with a Vessel of eight Guns take two English Ships, one of four and twenty, and the other of six and thirty Guns. They return to St. Domingo, where they share their Prizes, and fall into all manner of Debauchery. They put to Sea again. The History of a Philosophical Privateer. They attack a Ship of six and forty Guns and three hundred Men, and take it after a hot Resistance. But they have no sooner gained that Prize than she is taken from them by
an

C O N T E N T S.

an English Man of War, of fifty Guns, and a Frigate of six and thirty, who make them Prisoners. They are first sent to Jamaica, and from thence to the Prisons of Kingsale in Ireland. A Detail of the Miseries they are made to suffer. They all die except the Chevalier, who finds means to escape. He goes to Cork, where he has the Happiness to find a Widow, who out of Generosity does him Service, and who engages an English Captain to set him ashore in Hispaniola, from whence he goes to Petit Goave. There Monsieur de Choiseuil gives him a Vessel and ninety Men, with which he has the Boldness to go and cruize in Sight of the Ports of Jamaica, to revenge himself upon the first English he can take, for the Cruelties exercised in Ireland upon himself and his Companions. He takes an English Ship, and treats the Crew most barbarously. He has a Dispute with the Governor and Citizens of the Town of Canar. He attacks another English Ship, in which he finds two French Prisoners, one of whom is his Acquaintance.

Monne-

C O N T E N T S.

B O O K III.

Monneville *relates the mysterious History of his Birth. He is brought up till the Age of twelve under the Disguise of a Girl in the Castle of the Baron du Mefnil, with Lucilia the sole Heiress of that Nobleman. A Financier, deceived by the Dress of Monneville, carries him to Paris, under the Pretext of placing him with a Lady, in quality of her Woman ; but having other Views upon this false Peasant, he places her in a Convent as a Pensioner, spares nothing for her Education, and at length proposes to marry her. Monneville, to avoid his Importunities, searches and at length finds Means to leave the Convent. He puts on the Habit of a Cavalier, makes a Conquest of an Actress, and becomes Clerk to a great Man in the Revenues, who endeavours to marry him to his Daughter by force. Monneville refuses to consent to it. Upon his Refusal he is arrested, conveyed to Prison, and the next Day sent to Canada.*

THE



THE
ADVENTURES
OF THE
Chevalier de Beauchene.

BOOK I.

The Origin of Monsieur le Chevalier de Beauchene, and the Amusements of his Infancy; at seven Years old he is carried off by the Iroquese, where he is adopted by one of those Savages. His Occupation whilst with them. He is retaken some Years after by the Canadians, and restored to his Parents. He associates himself with some of the Algonquins, and goes with them upon several Expeditions. After having put to flight a Body of four hundred Men, raised the Siege of Port-Royal, and obliged five thousand English to retire,

VOL. I. B *he*

he quits his Algonquins, and turns Privateer. He goes a Cruize upon the Coasts of Jamaica, under Captain Morpain, and afterwards under the famous Montauban, after whose Death he is elected Captain.



Y Father and Mother, who were originally *French*, went to inhabit in *Canada*, not far from *Montreal*, upon the River of *St. Lawrence*.

They lived there in that happy Tranquility which is procured to the *Canadians*, by the easy Submission the Government exacts from them. I should have been educated well, if I had been capable of Discipline, but that I never was. From my earliest Childhood, I shewed myself so rebellious and so obstinate, that there was great doubt whether I should ever be any Honour to the Family. I was passionate, violent, always ready to strike, and to repay with Usury the Blows that were given me.

I remember one Day, my Mother endeavouring to tye me to a Post, that she

She might chastise me more conveniently, and not being able to manage me alone, as little as I was, she desired a young Curate, who came home to teach me to read, to lend her his Assistance. He did her this Service very charitably, with the Thought that this Correction might be useful to me; in which the good Man was much deceived. Far from looking upon his Aid as a charitable Action, for which I was obliged to him, it passed, in my small Judgment, for an Affront, that dishonoured me, and which I ought to revenge.

I turn'd all my Fury, therefore, against this poor Devil of a Master, and resolv'd to maul him. Finding myself too weak to execute this noble Scheme alone, I communicated it to several Boys, as excellently natur'd as myself, who did not fail to approve it, and to offer me their Hands towards so just an Execution. The Conspirators provided themselves with Stones, and all in a Body assaulted the poor Wretch who had provoked me, in such a fierce manner, that he would have undergone the Fate of the first Christian Martyr, if some People,

B 2

who

who by chance were passing by, had not rescued him from our Revenge. This good Ecclesiastick, whose Name is *Perriac*, some time after return'd into *France*. He resides now actually at *Nantes*, in a Seminary, of which he is the Superior: It is not above three Months since I saw him by Accident, and he made me recollect this glorious Exploit, telling me that he was charm'd that he had made a false Prediction; having foretold, in my Infancy, that I should get myself knock'd on the Head before I had a Beard.

My Parents, who saw me every Day in some fresh Piece of Mischief, like this that I have spoken of, judg'd full as unfavourably of me, and I am astonish'd myself that I am still in the World, after having so often expos'd myself to the utmost Dangers. Never Child discover'd such a Disposition to be a furious Quareller; a new *Ismael*, the Son of *Hagai*. I was never satisfied but when I had Knives, Arrows, Swords, or Pistols in my Hand: They were my Play-things. They did what they would with me; if they promis'd me Arms,
and

and if they had the Imprudence to perform their Promise, I tried them upon the first Animal I met: Before I was seven Years old, there was scarce left a Cat or a Dog in the Neighbourhood. It was thus I exercis'd my growing Valour, till I was strong enough to make a more noble Use of it, and to fight with my three Brothers against the *Iroquese*.

These Savages, gain'd by the Presents of the *English*, sometimes made Incurfions even to the Gates of *Montreal*; they enter'd the Country in small Parties, concealed themselves in the Woods during the Day, re-assembled themselves in the Night, and fell upon the Villages. They pillaged them, and afterwards retired hastily with their Booty, after having set Fire to what they could not carry off. But above all they took care not to forget the Hair of those they had kill'd; and, without dispute, they are greater Artists than any Barber in *Europe*, at preserving every Hair, for they tear off at the same time the Skin of the Head. They extend these Skins upon little Circles of Osier, and preserve them carefully. These are the

Standards, the Trophies, they chuse to take from their Enemies. These are the Military Honours of the *Iroquese*. Their Courage is estimated by the Number of Heads of Hair that they possess. They are honour'd and respected in Proportion, and the Glory of a Father, who has distinguished himself from others by his Bravery, has not, as in *Europe*, the least Influence of Honour upon a Son who appears unworthy of him.

The Troop of *Iroquese*, who made themselves most dreaded about *Chambly* and *Montreal*, had one of the most celebrated Savages for their Chief; he himself could have furnished the best accustom'd Peruke-maker in *Paris*, and was the Terror of *Canada*. This terrible Mortal was named the *Black-Kettle*. There was not a Person in that Country who could boast that he had heard that formidable Name without trembling. Will it be believ'd, that publick Prayers were demanded to be deliver'd from his Fury, as formerly in certain Provinces of *France*, the People begg'd of God to deliver them from the Rage of the *Normans*.

All that I heard reported of this famous Savage, did not so much inspire me with Fear as a Desire of seeing him. I knew it was the Custom of the *Iro-quese*, instead of killing the Children, to carry them off, and bring them up in their own Manner. This made me wish to be carried away by them. I am curious, said I, to know these People by my own Experience, and to try whether I shall not find more Pleasure in their Habitation, than I have in my own Family, where I am scolded and contradicted every Moment: The Savages certainly will let me make use of Weapons as much as I please; far from disputing the Pleasure I take in using them, as my Parents do, they will see with Joy my warlike Humour, and give me Occasions of exercising it. I formed a Design, therefore, to go and join them on the first Incursion they should make near *Montreal*; which did not fail to happen in a short Time, as I am going to relate.

Monsieur *de Frontenac*, the Governor of *Canada*, embark'd to pass into *France*. He was scarce departed, before the *Iro-quese*

quese endeavour'd to make use of his Absence, to revenge themselves for the Ravages which had been made the preceeding Year in one of their Cantons *, by Messieurs the Marquis *de Denouville*, *de Cailleres*, and *de Vaudreuil*. Thus, on all Sides, nothing was heard of but Villages surprized, pillaged, and burnt. As to me, I waited impatiently till the *Black Kettle's* Troop should draw near us, when one Evening the Alarm was spread over all the Quarter. The Men run to their Arms, and prepared themselves to defend their Country. What a Subject of Rapture for me, to behold the whole World preparing themselves for Battle! Instead of hiding myself with the Women, I prepared to follow my Brothers, who were of an Age to use their Swords, for the Defence of our Gods *Penates*; and I cry'd out, in the Excess of Joy that transported me, that I was glad I should see that Savage, whose Name resounded on all Sides. This drew upon me, from my Mother, a Reprimand, preceded by a Box on the Ear, which I durst not indeed return, but

* The Canton of the *Sonontuans*, which was ravaged by the *French* in 1687.

but which I resolv'd within myself not to leave unpunished. I escaped from her Hands, notwithstanding the Efforts she made to retain me; and running to the Place where I heard the Noise of Fire-Arms, I arriv'd at the Field of Battle, resolv'g to take my Flight with the *Iroquese*; or if they disdain'd to take me, to be however a Spectator of the Combat; as much to revenge myself on my Mother, as to enjoy a Spectacle that was agreeable to me.

The Savages struck their Blow in less than a Quarter of an Hour. They kill'd about thirty People, before they were in a Condition to repulse them, set Fire to several Houses, and retired with a large, tho' not with a very rich Booty, and some few Prisoners, amongst whom my eldest Brother had the Misfortune to be found. As I look'd round with great Eagerness to find the *Iroquese*, I perceiv'd twelve or fifteen of them unfurnishing a House before they burnt it, and fetching out of it two little Children; I immediately call'd out, as loud as I could possibly, Quarter, Gentlemen, Quarter! I yield; carry me along with you.

I don't know that they understood me, however I presented myself to them with so good a Grace, that they could not refuse me the Satisfaction of being their Prisoner ; one of them took me upon his Shoulders, and we soon join'd the rest of the Troop ; what is most uncommon was, that instead of crying, like the other little Boys, I held a Kettle and a Copper-pot in my Hands, that the Savage who bore me had quitted to take me up.

After a March of eight or ten Leagues, the *Iroquese* remarking the Approach of Day, halted in a Wood to repose themselves till Night ; and as they were preparing to pursue their Journey, they were on a sudden attack'd by two hundred *Canadians* and *Algonquins*, who, unhappily, not having perceiv'd time enough the Place where the Prisoners were fasten'd, could not deliver them. The *Iroquese* who guarded them, having heard the Cry of War †, immediately knocked them on the Head. The

† This Cry, which the *Canadians* have imitated from the Savages, is a kind of Howling, which

The *Iroquese* are easily overcome when they are surprized. They rather chuse to attack, than to defend themselves. They immediately took their Flight, carrying us off with them, and leaving nine of their Men in the Power of the Enemy.

These *Canadians*, who had perform'd this hasty Expedition, were commanded by Messieurs *de Maricour*, *de St. Helene*, and *de Longueil*, Brothers, all Men of Valour, and of the principal Family of *Montreal*. These brave Officers, excited by the Sollicitations of my two other Brothers, made this Attempt to rescue my eldest Brother and myself from the Hands of the Savages.

In that Canton of the *Iroquese* to which I was carried, it was the Custom to burn all their Prisoners. They tied them to a Stake, round which they light-
ed

which is formed by striking their Hands upon their Mouths: It serves for two Purposes; to affright the Enemy whom they surprize, and as a Signal to themselves.

ed four Fires at so great a Distance, that those unhappy Wretches were two, and sometimes three whole Days before they expired. The *Canadians* had often threaten'd the Savages to treat them in the same manner, if they did not abolish this barbarous Custom, and conform to the Laws of War. The *Iroquesse* had always despised their Menaces, so that Monsieur *de Maricour* and his Brothers, whatever Horror they had for such an Inhumanity, thought themselves obliged to exercise it upon the nine Prisoners that they had taken.

Every one knows that amongst these Savages, a Man that has been made Prisoner, to whatever kind of Death they destiny him, may be preserv'd from Execution by any one of the Assistants that adopts him, by throwing a String of Beads round his Neck, and one of their Mantles upon his Body, without any further Ceremony. Now it must be observed, that this Monsieur *de Maricour* that I speak of, had been formerly carried off by the *Iroquesse*, and adopted in this Manner, and that having
found

found means to escape from them, he had return'd to *Montreal*.

He then, as Chief of the Expedition, commanded by way of Reprisals, that the nine Savages that he had taken should be burn'd. He was excited to it strongly by my Relations, who demanded their Deaths with the greatest Entreaties, and all the *Canadians* consented to it; but *M. de St. Vallier*, Bishop of *Quebeck*, happening to be then at *Montreal*, where he came to give his Confirmation, opposed it with all his Power. He made a most pathetick Discourse to the People, and employ'd even Tears to excite their Compassion. But Policy render'd the Eloquence of the Prelate in vain, *Monfieur de Maricour* was inexorable, and all the Spectators judg'd that upon this Occasion Cruelty was to be preferred before Mercy.

The Prisoners were fastened each to their Stake, and the Air immediately resounded with their Voices: They began to sing what they call their Song of Death. This Song generally contains the Enumeration of the Persons
they

they have killed in their Incursions, and the Numbers of the Heads of Hair that adorn their Huts. Notwithstanding the dreadful Preparations of Death that surround them, they appear calm; you see no Impression either of Fear or Sorrow upon their Countenances. They look upon it as a Mark of Cowardice to be afraid to die, and even not to sing when they are upon losing their Lives. There are not many *Europeans* capable of this Steadiness.

Whilst Monsieur *de Maricour* gave his Orders for the Execution of the nine *Iroquese*, he perceived that him who seemed to be the Chief of them did not sing; and that instead of testifying the same Gaiety as his Companions, he was buried in a profound Sorrow. He reproached him for it in the *Iroquese* Language, which he understood perfectly: How comes it, my Friend, said he to him, thou wantest Courage! thou seemest to finish thy Days with Regret! Thou art mistaken, replied the Savage: It is not Death that afflicts me, and prevents me from singing. I am more valiant than thyself. Look upon my
Casse

Casse * *Tete* ; thou may'st behold there the Marks of fifty-five Enemies whom I have kill'd. But, what afflicts me now is, added he, my having preserved thee, ten Years ago, from the Fate which thou now destineest for me. At these Words Monsieur *de Maricour* looked upon the *Iroquese* with more Attention than before, and recollected him to be the Savage who had adopted him ; he run to him immediately, calling him his Father ; he embraced him with Transport several times, and then turning to the People, he demanded of them the Pardon of this Savage. The People, already touched by this Adventure, began to cry out that he should be untied, when one named *Cardinal*, a young Inhabitant of *Montreal*, whose Brother had been killed in the last Expedition, approaching hastily to the *Iroquese* whom they designed to save, plunged into his Bosom the Knife that they wear in that Country fixed to their Girdle, to the great Grief of Monsieur *de Maricour*.

After

* A kind of Club bent at the End, sharp and cutting where it bends.

After they had burn'd seven of the eight Prisoners that remain'd, they left the Eighth exposed two or three Hours to the Fires which were lighted round him, that he might speak more feelingly of the bitter Pangs his Companions had suffered, when he returned into his Canton; where he was sent to tell his Countrymen, that if they did not cease to burn their Prisoners, they must expect the same Treatment in return. This Example of Severity had more Effect upon the *Iroquese*, than the Clemency with which they had always used those who had been taken before; for they had always sent them back free, and sometimes loaded with Gifts. After that Time they scarce ever burn'd a *Canadian*; but, some *Hurons*, and a great Number of *Algonquins*, gave me that Amusement during the six Years that I remained with the *Iroquese*.

Upon my arrival at the Village I found another Mother; a Woman who had lost her Husband and one of her Children in the Combat, adopted me, and making Choice of another Husband,

band, she was soon comforted. But I speak like an *European*; she stood in need of no Consolation: Far from afflicting herself for the Loss she had had, she rejoiced at it: Besides the infinite Honour that redounded to her from the Memory of the Deceased, who had died gloriously for their Country, they left her a Succession of a copious Number of Scalps.

There were several Children of my Age in the Huts, and a great Number in the Village. I could not think I had lost any thing, since I saw I had still a Father, a Mother, Brothers and Companions. But what pleased me the most in my new Parents was, that instead of hindering me, as the others did, from touching any Weapons, they taught me how to use them, and let me exercise them continually. However, I drew upon myself frequently most ungentle Corrections, because I was always seeking Quarrels, and coming to Blows with the other little Boys, whom I wounded dangerously. There was every Day almost a Head broke by my Performances; which occasioned my savage

vage Parents often to think of sending me back to *Canada*, though they loved me tenderly. They could not however resolve upon it ; for I testified so great a Repugnance to leave them, when they threatened to have me conveyed to *Montreal*, that I attached them still more strongly to me. I went upon Incursions against the other Savages, and they admitted me into their greatest Parties of Hunting when I was but twelve Years old. But indeed I was more formed and more robust than other young People were at Eighteen ; had it not been for this Strength which has augmented continually to this Day, and which may with Truth be stiled extraordinary, I must have perished in fifty Occasions, where that alone saved my Life.

I could here give a truer Description of the Manners and Customs of the *Iroquese*, than any other Person can do ; but there are so many of those Botchers of Narrations, that I frankly leave to another the Pleasure of making known the Falsities of those that are so universally read. Having been brought
up

up amongst this savage Nation, I must be fully instructed in its Customs; I so strongly acquired the Spirit of them, that I looked upon myself for many Years as an *Iroquese*. Several Years were necessary for me, I don't say to conquer, but only to soften a little that Fierceness which I had contracted by being with these People, so different from the rest of the World, and whose manner of Living suited but too strongly with my Inclinations.

I breathed nought but War: Yet, whatever Desire I had to fight, I refused to follow my Parents when they went to War against the *Canadians*, and even against the *Algonquins*; which they did very frequently to please the *English* who induced them to it, and sent them for that purpose great Quantities of Arms, Cutlers Ware, and Brandy. They made such frequent IncurSIONS into *Canada*, that Monsieur *de Frontenac*, who was then the Governor, pursued them in the beginning of the Year 1695, and approached to pillage the Canton where I dwelt. Our Savages were obliged for this Visit to the *English*

lish who were with us, and who had persuaded them that nothing was so easy as to surprize Monsieur *de Frontenac*, and take him Prisoner.

'Tis impossible to be more embarrassed than I was upon this Occasion. I was absolutely resolved not to fight against the *Canadians*: The *Iroquese*, thinking me strong enough to enter into the Combat, threatened to kill me if I did not behave as the rest. What Resolution could I take! Happily for me the Love I bore my Country was not put to so strong a Trial; for the *Canadians* marched into our Canton in such regular Order, that we were obliged to retire, and let them ruin it, without being able to enterprize any thing against them, or to do them any other Harm than by killing some of their Centinels by Night with our Arrows.

As all their Ravages were founded in destroying, tearing up, and burning, without any Profit by our Spoils, they were soon tired of exercising so fruitless a Revenge. They returned from whence they came; which we had no sooner remarked,

remarked, than we resolved to pursue them, being more strongly excited by Revenge than we had been to the Defence of our Country. We did not in the least consult upon a general Attack. Every Chief of a Village conducted his People as he thought proper. Divided into three or four Troops, for several Days we only coasted round the Enemy, and kept hovering near their Left Wing in the Night, without being able to attack them.

One Evening however we perceived about two or three Hundred of them, who not imagining us so near them, had retired into a Meadow at some Distance from the rest of the Army; we resolved to carry off this small Corps, which we attacked about Midnight. I joined myself in the Party, upon the Assurance that was given me that they were *Hurons*, who were taking to the Left to regain their Country by the Way of the great Lake. We killed at the first Onset about ten or twelve; but four or five Bodies of them, who were placed as Advanced Guards, received us so handsomely, that they soon threw

us

us into Disorder, and put us to flight. They chose us out by the Light of the Fires round their Troops, and did not send one Musket-shot in vain.

The Passion I had for Arms, not permitting me to be one of the first that retired, I was surrounded with my adopted Father, who endeavouring to disengage me from five or six *Canadians* that were round me, was taken with me. We were fasten'd to two Trees, and we expected they would burn us as soon as it was Day. I was not too well pleased with this Ceremony at my Time of Life; and what mortified me still more than an immature Death was, that having kill'd no Enemies, I had nothing to say in my Song of Death. My Savage Father entering into my Grief, told me, to comfort me, that it was sufficient to prove I died a brave Man, that I was taken with my Arms in my Hand.

Tho' he had reason to believe, that he would be saved with me if I made myself known, yet he exhorted me not to discover that I was a *Canadian*. I promis'd him I would not, without know-
ing,

ing why, and without telling him that I thought this was keeping the Secret very *mal apropos*. Too much Vivacity, however, hinder'd me from keeping my Promise to him. Amongst those who came to examine us, when it was Light, a tall lusty Man took me by the Chin, to look in my Face, and said to the others, *Parbleu*, Messieurs, this is a very young one; it would be a Pity to have him roasted, he is but a Child: At these Words, which I could not suffer with Patience, I said to him, in a Rage, Great Booby, only let me be untied, and let me come at thee, and thou shalt see whether I am but a Child.

My Hastiness caused an extreme Surprise among the *Canadians*, who flock'd about me in Crowds, to consider me with all the Attention that a young *Iro-queuse* seem'd to deserve, who spoke the *French* Language so well. We were immediately untied, both my Savage Father and myself; they conducted us to the Commanding Officer, who having obliged me to confess that I was born a *Canadian*, offer'd us our Lives, if we would follow him. I accepted his Offer
without

without Hesitation, resolving to be gone from him on the first Occasion that presented itself. As to the Savage, he refused to follow me, and never ceased to reproach me, till, having procured him his Liberty, I had given him my Promise to rejoin him speedily.

The Officer who commanded this Troop of *Canadians*, which we attack'd so *mal apropos*, was then call'd Monsieur *le Gendre* : I say, then call'd so, because I have known him since under the Name of Count *de Monneville*, and run through many Adventures with him, as will be seen in the History of my Life ; we conceived for each other, from that Moment, a Friendship, which still endures in its full Extent.

He carried off with him, as Slaves, several *Iroquesse* Women, and a great Number of Children. I apprehended much that I was to go with him upon the same Footing ; and in that case I propos'd to make myself known to my Relations at *Montreal*. But my Fears were vain ; he procured me Soldier's Pay, in a poor little Fort that he commanded,

manded, about fifty Leagues North from *Chambly*, and I enjoy'd a perfect Liberty. He did more, my frank open Air pleas'd him; he took me into all his Parties, obliged me to eat at his Table, and treated me as his Equal.

We pass'd the Days in an agreeable Habitation that he had in the Country, and in which any other but me would have thought himself happy to have been fix'd. Monsieur *le Gendre* led the most quiet and regular Life imaginable there: That did not suit me in the least; it was impossible for me to be satisfied with it long, and to agree to the Taste he had for Repose; I must have Fatigues, Incurfions, Combats, or at least some Quarrels to have amused me, and I could find no Opportunity for them there; and yet, in so peaceful an Habitation, Monsieur *le Gendre* and myself were very near dying a violent Death.

An Officer of the Fort seeing me one Morning with two of the Soldiers, who were driving out the Cold with Brandy, join'd himself to our Party. Our Con-

versation turn'd upon the *Iroquefe*; the Soldiers, desirous of being thoroughly inform'd of these Savages, asked me several Questions, and I took a Pleasure in satisfying their Curiosity. The Officer entering into the Conversation, question'd me in his Turn; after which, having desired me to follow him, he carry'd me into his Closet, took out a Bottle, uncork'd it, and filled a Glass, which he presented to me: Drink this Wine, said he to me, I believe it will suit your Taste. I put the Glass to my Mouth, only just to wet my Lips, and made the Grimace of a Man who dislikes his Liquor. How is this, cried he? what! do you think it bad? Very bad, return'd I, with all the Frankness of a Savage, who had not learn'd to lie out of Politeness. I see, said he laughing, that you are no great Connoisseur; this is one of the best Wines in *France*; I am satisfied Monsieur *le Gendre* would judge differently of it. I should be glad, added he, to share with him a little Parcel that I have procured of this Wine, which was presented to me, but it is what I dare not propose to him myself; there has been a little Difference between

us, and perhaps he would not receive my Compliment well; you must make use of your Address to reconcile us. I desire no better, reply'd I, only tell me how I must behave. Nothing is more easy, said the Officer, only let him taste of my Wine, without telling him from whom it comes, and if he thinks it excellent, as I don't doubt but he will, you shall inform me of it privately; I will send him a few Barrels, and I have it in my Mind that this little Present will bring about our Reconciliation.

I approved this Project of Accommodation extremely, and promised very sincerely to endeavour to make it succeed. I receiv'd from the Officer a Bottle closely seal'd, and I assur'd him I would make the Use of it he desired. By the greatest Happiness in the World, I did not quit the Officer immediately, amusing myself with him for some time; after which I retired without taking the Bottle, which I left thro' Forgetfulness in the Fort, and return'd to my two Soldiers, with whom I continued till Night, driving away Cold and Melancholly. The next Morning, recollect-

C 2

ing

ing that I had not done what the Officer desired me, I was preparing to go to him, when a Soldier came to inform me, that he, and two of his Domesticks, were found dead in their Beds, and all three of the same Poison, according to the Information of the Surgeon. I doubted not but this dreadful Accident was the Work of this Bottle of Reconciliation; and after having related to Monsieur *le Gendre* what had pass'd the Day before, between me and the Officer, we made a thousand Reflexions upon it, without being able to fix a certain Judgment, or daring to decide whether the Deceas'd was innocent or guilty. However that might be, I thank'd Heaven for not having given me one of those sedate solid Tempers, that think of every thing, and never forget the least Article of the Commissions they are charg'd with.

This melancholly Event, tho' Monsieur *le Gendre* had nothing to reproach himself with, yet laid him under a Necessity of going to *Quebec*. He proposed to me to make this little Journey with him, and I willingly accepted the
Pro-

Proposition. As we pass'd thro' *Montreal*, I resolv'd out of meer Curiosity to see my Parents, without making myself known to them. I imagin'd that this was easy to be done, but I was mistaken; my Resolution not holding out against the Emotions of Tenderness that Nature inspires upon these Occasions: For when I came up to my Father and Mother, those tender Names sprung from me in spite of myself, instead of those of *Monsieur* and *Madame*, which I had design'd to pronounce. I was receiv'd at home like another prodigal Son, the Authors of my Birth returning the most ardent Thanks to Heaven for my Return: As to my Brothers, who had never loved me, they express'd no great Joy, and all the Neighbourhood was in Terror, remembering the Tricks I had used to play them. My Father and Mother went immediately to demand my Liberty of *Monsieur le Gendre*, who could not refuse it to their Entreaties, whatever Regret he had to lose me.

'Tis easy to judge, that a young Fellow of my Humour could make no long Stay in his Father's House, without

being tired ; I soon regretted my Savages ; I was not absolutely and entirely Master of the House ; this was too great a Restraint upon me : I thought it very hard to be under a Necessity of submitting to the Right my Father and Mother made use of, to reprimand me with Impunity. As to my Brothers, tho' they were Officers, and older than myself, I soon put them upon a proper Footing. I accusom'd them to submit to me, as well as all Strangers, who, not to be obliged to handle their Arms continually, chose rather to resolve to bear with my haughty Airs.

To avoid the Idleness which I must naturally have fallen into, I gave myself wholly up to Hunting : To this Effect I associated myself with some *Algonquins*, and living more like a Savage than a *Canadian*, I was often six Months without returning to my Parents, who, far from complaining of these long Absences, began then to be obliged to me for them. Sometimes, also, I return'd with a large Troop of *Algonquins*, who had chose me for their Chief, and who obeyed my Orders. When I marched
into

into *Montreal* at their Head, I was haughtier than a victorious General; and woe to that Tradesman who did not salute me with Reverence enough, or dared to look in my Face.

An Affair that I had in that City, in the middle of the Year 1701, attach'd me wholly to my *Algonquins*. The Fact was this: We, that is, myself and about a hundred *Canadians*, undertook to escort Monsieur *de la Mothe de Cadillac*, who was sent with two Subaltern Officers, near two hundred Leagues from *Montreal*, to command at the *Streight* *. When we were at the Place, which is named the *Fall of China*, because there is a Water-fall there, upon the River of *St. Lawrence*, where they are obliged to unload their Goods, Monsieur *de Cadillac* undertook to search the Canoes, to see if we had not brought more Brandy than was allowed. He discover'd more than was licenc'd in several of the Canoes,

* The *Streight* is an Establishment with a good Fort, which was erected by the Orders of Monsieur *de Pontchartrain*, upon the River, or more properly the Canal, which joins the Lake of the *Hurons* to the Lake *Erle*.

and immediately raising his Voice, demanded, with a magisterial Air, whose it was ; one of my Brothers was near him, who answer'd him in the same Tone, that it belonged to us, and that he had no Authority to find Fault with it.

Cadillac was a *Gascon*, and consequently hot ; he affronted my Brother, who drew upon him immediately ; *Cadillac* receiv'd him like a Man of Courage, and making him retreat, he was going to disarm him, when throwing myself between them, I push'd aside my Brother, and took his Place, and repuls'd my Enemy so briskly, that he had no Occasion to be sorry that we were parted. He is, I believe, still alive ; if he dares, let him contradict me.

We were but three Leagues from *Montreal* ; *Cadillac* return'd thither to make his Complaints : I had the Indiscretion to follow him, instead of retiring with my Savages. Monsieur *de Champigny*, who was then Intendant, sent me Word upon my Arrival to come to him ; I was advised to withdraw myself, but I rejected this Counsel, which
appear'd

appear'd to me more timid than prudent. I did not hesitate a Moment to repair to the Intendant, without being agitated with the least Fear; on the contrary, I thought he ought to fear me, and did not imagine he would be bold enough to say any thing disobliging to me.

I enter'd into his Apartment with an audacious Air, and dressed as usual like a Savage; I remember he had about him above fifty Officers, besides Monsieur *de Ramefe*, the Governor of the Place, and several Ladies: Approach, said the Intendant to me calmly, approach, Monsieur *le Mutin*, 'tis you then who pretend to draw your Sword against your Officer? Yes, Monsieur, reply'd I, it was me, and I ought to have done it, if I would not suffer my Brother to be murder'd before my Eyes. Your Brother, reply'd he, is a Mutineer, whom you ought not to have imitated, and who must submit to the Punishment inflicted by the Laws, when we can find him. As to you, I condemn you to the Dungeon, where you must remain,

if you please, till Monsieur *de la Mothe* condescends to pardon you.

I had perswaded myself, that the Intendant only design'd to frighten me, and that it was agreed that Monsieur *de Ramefe*, with the other Officers, should demand my Pardon, if I submitted without murmuring to the Sentence pronounc'd; but that was impossible, the Word Dungeon set Fire to me in a Moment, and looking upon Monsieur *de Champigny* with an irritated Look,—It shall not be, reply'd I haughtily; as long as I have my Sabre, I will not go to the Dungeon, nor so long as my Savages are in the Place. Thereupon I made some Steps to go out, but all the Officers threw themselves before me, and disarm'd me; assuring me that I should not be punish'd if I obey'd the Intendant. As I would not submit, notwithstanding all that they could say to me, the Guards of the Governor at last were obliged to seize me, and led me, or rather carried me to Prison, not without receiving a large Quantity of Cuffs from me, which they returned a Hundred-fold.

I passed three Days in the Dungeon, with Fetters on my Feet, biting upon the Bridle. After this the Intendant, whose Intention was to satisfy my Savages, who began to murmur at my Imprisonment, sent for me to appear before him, and told me that he was sorry that I had constrain'd him to punish me; that he esteem'd me, and that I might depend upon his serving me in every thing that depended upon him; that he only exhorted me to use my utmost Efforts to moderate my Violence of Temper, and that in consideration to me he forgave my Brother; a Favour which proved very useless to him, since the Shame of being overcome by *Cadillac* made him retire amongst the Savages, from whence he never return'd.

The Day that I came out of Prison, I learn'd that Monsieur *de Ramefe*, out of Friendship to me, had made my Excuses to Monsieur *de la Mothe*, and that he had at first obtained of the Intendant that I should be only an Hour in the Dungeon, but that old Madame *d'Arpintigni*, who, unfortunately for me, was then paying her Court to Monsieur
de

de Champigny, had prevented my Enlargement ; that this malicious Woman had represented to him that I could not be treated too severely ; and that she said to the Intendant,—Ah ! my Lord, you ought to let him rot in Prison, you would do a great Service to the Country by it ; nobody is safe from the Fury of this Vagabond ; I, myself, that speak to you, my Lord, have Reasons of Complaint against him ; he insulted me lately with an Insolence that deserves corporal Punishment.

Behold in what consisted this pretended Insult done to this Dame *d'Arpintigni* : I had sold her Furs upon Credit, to pay me at such a specified Time ; she let it pass without satisfying me ; I demanded the Money of her, she refused me ; I threatened her in Terms which perhaps she thought too uncivil ; however, I only told her with an Oath, that if I was not paid in four and twenty Hours, I would flea her alive in her own House, and then set fire to it.

Independant of the Kindness Monsieur *de Ramefe* had for me, there was a very good Reason for setting me at liberty. I was become necessary in regard to the Savages who were attached to me. The War was commenced in *Europe* upon Account of the Crown of *Spain*, and by Consequence between the *English* in *New-England*, and the *Canadians*. This was one of those Conjunctions in which it is important to manage the Savages. The *Iroquese* had buried the Axe, to speak in their Language; that is to say, had made Peace. But it was feared that they would break it again in the Year 1698. Monsieur *de Frontenac*, not long before his Death, had made a kind of Truce with them, finding them stunned by the Loss of their famous Chief *Black Kettle*, who was killed by a Party of young *Algonquins*. There was so little Dependance made upon this irregular Treaty, that Monsieur *de Callieres* judging that another ought to be made, concluded a solid Peace with the *Iroquese* in 1701, by the Care and Address of Monsieur *de Maricour*, and Father *Anselm*, a Jesuit. These two experienced

perienced Negotiators conveyed themselves amongst the Savages, whose Genius they were perfectly well acquainted with, and engaged them to send their Deputies to *Montreal*, who planted the *Tree of Peace* there, as they express themselves, and danced the *Calumet* to the Number of eight or nine hundred.

From that Time the *English*, having spared nothing to induce them to take up the Axe again against us, had partly succeeded ; since by vertue of Presents they gained upon some of the Savages, who towards the latter End of the Year 1703, set Fire by Surprize to the Fort which Monsieur *de Cadillac* commanded at the *Streight*.

The Nation of the *Iroquesse* in general did not however look upon this Enterprize as an Infraction of the Treaty ; for having met with several Troops of them in the Woods soon after, we were received more like Friends than Enemies by them ; they would absolutely smoak, and *make Kettle* * with us. Thirty *Algonquins* who accompanied
me,

* Boil their Provision, and eat together.

me, at first apprehended that we must come to Blows: But the *Iroquese* protested to us, that they would never lift up the Axe against the *French*, nor against their Allies; but that as to the *English*, whom they had Reason to be dissatisfied with, they would give them no Quarter. I was curious to know why they complained of the *English*, and I enquired it of them. They told me that they were unsatisfied for several Reasons; and among the rest, for one that they laid to Heart extremely: That they had carried some Furs to *Corlard*, in *New-York*, where, after having sought for two Days one of their Companions, who had lost himself, they found him hanged in an unfrequented Wood.

At this Word (*hanged*) all the *Iroquese* made the most frightful Shrieks, and expressed the greatest Sorrow. You would have thought they had still before their Eyes the unfortunate Companion whose Fate they deplored. I did not lose so fair an Occasion of exhorting them not to leave so barbarous an Insult unpunished. I did more; I
offered

offered myself, to serve their Vengeance, to depart immediately with them, and procure Reparation for this Outrage. They took me at my Word : But afterwards reflecting upon our small Number, they asked me if I could not obtain a greater Succour from our Father *Muntis* *. I imagined that our Governor, whom they called by that Name, would not be sorry to make use of this Conjuncture, to form some Enterprize which might set these Savages at Variance with the *English* for some Time. In this Confidence, I conducted Part of these *Iroquesse* to *Montreal*, in Quality of Deputies of their Nation. I presented them to Monsieur *de Ramese*, who stifled their Resentments, and promised them Assistance ; and effectively, after having writ to Monsieur *de Vaudreuil*, he gave them three Hundred *Canadians*, commanded by Monsieur *de Beaucour*, Engineer and Captain of a Company of Foot. Besides this, he desired me to induce the greatest Number of *Algonquins* I could to join the Party. I assured him, that

* The Savages stile a Sovereign thus, or a Master ; and also God himself.

that it should not be my Fault, if I did not determine a great Number of them to follow me. I made him this Assurance with a Fervor and Zeal, that drew several Compliments from him. But to say the Truth, if I entered so hotly into his political Views, it was not so much out of Love to the Publick Good, as from the Pleasure I felt at the Prospect of ravaging a Country.

I harangued the *Algonquins*; near four Hundred suffered themselves to be perswaded; and when they had given me their Promise, we departed for this Expedition at the latter End of *June*, 1704. The *Iroquesse* Deputies were before returned to their Cantons, to give an Account to their Brethren of the Result of their Deputation; one Part of them was to join us in the Way, and the others, on a certain appointed Day, were to enter the Country in several Troops. We arrived at the Rendezvous before the Time prefix'd, tho' the Road was difficult, and above one hundred and fifty Leagues in length. Unfortunately Monsieur *de Beaucour* had
carried

carried with him some *French* Soldiers, who not being accustomed to our Canoes, could not support the Fatigue, and were of much more Inconvenience than Service to us. When these Canoes were to be carried over Land, as they were several times, and especially once for twenty five Leagues, they could scarce drag themselves; this was not the Way to be helpful to us in carrying our Canoes and our Provisions. Yet, this would have been nothing, if one of them had not made us fail in our Enterprize by the blackest of Treasons.

This perfidious Wretch, whilst we halted in the Woods, thirty Leagues from the first *English* Villages, to hide our Canoes there, and to repose ourselves till it was Light, as we had agreed upon with the *Iroquese*; this Traitor having recovered his Strength prevented us, and went to advertise our Enemies of our Approach; so that we looked very foolish, when drawing near a Village which we had depended upon pillaging in the first Place, we plainly perceived two thousand *English* under
Arms,

Arms, who waited for us in good Order. This obliged us to retire abruptly, and regain our Wood. As we were not far distant from *Orange* *, the Garrison of which might have intercepted us, we were constrained to return to our Canoes without having fired a Gun. This piqued us the more, as the Year before *Monfieur de Beaubassin*, Son to *Monfieur de la Valiere*, Major of the Fort of *Montreal*, had ravaged above five and twenty Leagues in the same Country, though he had scarce a Handful of *Canadians* with him, and fewer Savages than we had.

The Expence of this Armament was not so considerable, but that we should easily have comforted ourselves for this false Step, if we had come off with only losing our Labour ; but we had carried Provisions only for the Journey, reckoning upon this, that the Magazines of the Enemy would furnish us with more than sufficient for our Return. We were deceived in our Calculation, and our Excursion was very near costing us our Lives ; at least several of

* A Town in the Province of *New-York*.

of our Companions perished in it, who remained by the Way unable to follow us ; or out of Weakness were bore down in their Canoes by the Rapidlty of the Stream, and drowned seven or eight at a time.

My Savages succeeded a little better in this Adventure than the rest ; they continually got some Fish, or some sort of Game ; but in small Quantities, the Season not being favourable for Fishing, because of the Heat. This made them murmur against Messieurs *de Beaucour* and *de Vaudreuil* ; and especially against me, for whose Sake they had taken the Field. One amongst them, a most innocent young Fellow, carried his Resentment still further, and made us all laugh one Evening, notwithstanding the Misery we were in. 'Tis universally known, that the Savages subject to *France* are almost all baptized, and yet so ignorant, that they don't know the first Principles of the Christian Religion : They are looked upon as Doctors, and the learned Men of the Canton, if they carry their Erudition so far as to get by Heart the Litanies

tanies of the Virgin, which they repeat publickly every Morning and Evening as their Prayers. As to the other indocile Disciples of the Missionaries, they can only answer, *Ora pro nobis*, and that very brokenly. It happened then that one of this Rank, who had stunn'd us every Day with his *Ora pro nobis*'s, having one Night kept a profound Silence, surprized us all by this Novelty. How is this, *Makino*, said I to him, after the Prayers, thou hast said nothing to Day? Thou hast not prayed to the *Muntis*. He answered me abruptly : *Matagon tarondi, Matagon ora pro nobis*. If God give me something to eat, I will give him *Ora pro nobis*.

The greatest Part of the other Savages did not think him so much in the wrong. Some of them even imitated him ; and as we had eat nothing for three Days, Despair began to seize upon us, and no Person found Courage sufficient to exhort the rest to Patience. I believe we must have all inevitably perished in the Deserts, if we had not been on a sudden assisted by that Providence, against which we had not been able

able to keep ourselves from murmuring. We had still above half our Way to go, when we received a Supply of Provisions.

It was Monsieur *de Vaudreuil* himself, that sent them to us ; advertis'd of the deplorable Situation we were in, by one of those Savages whom they call Jugglers, he had hasten'd this Succour to prevent our Ruin. This Juggler had assured him that his *Ouabiche*, or *Dæmon*, had inform'd him in the Night, that his Brothers were betrayed, and were returning without Provisions, together with the whole Troop. We had, indeed, two Brothers of this Savage with us, one of whom was his Twin-Brother. Those who know me, know that it is not my Defect to be too credulous ; nevertheless, I confess, that the Jugglers, if they could not convince me, at least, have often astonish'd me. I relate this Fact, because it is certain that, but for this Juggler, we must all have perished in the Woods. In whatsoever manner he learned the Condition we were in, whether by Magick, whether in a Dream, as our Learned hold,
or

or by Sympathy, what did it signify to us, he divin'd it, however, and saved our Lives.

Monfieur *de Vaudreuil* was the first to make a Jest of the Advice of the Juggler, and did not determine to send us Assistance, but by the pressing Sollicitation of several Officers, who represented to him that, without having any Regard to the Visions of the Savage, he might seem to believe it mysterious, and charge him with the Conduct of a little Convoy of Provisions to us; this was executed more out of Pleasantry than for any Belief they gave him. Whoever has frequented Monsieur *de Vaudreuil's*, has doubtless heard him relate this History, which he was never tired of repeating, as well as twenty-five other *French* Officers, who were Witnesses of the Confidence with which the Juggler related to him the pretended Conversation he had had with his *Dæmon*.

The bad Success of this Enterprize render'd my Savages more circumspect, and less eager to join themselves to the
Cana-

Canadians, and the Perfidy of the *French* Soldiers prejudiced them terribly against the whole Nation. They would no longer have any Commerce with a People whom they saw capable of violating what ought to be most sacred to Mankind; and if they still remain'd subject to *France*, I perceiv'd it was more out of Fear than out of Inclination. So much Value do these good People, in their ignorant Simplicity, set upon Truth and Probity.

I myself, soon after, made no good Apology for the *French* Nation, in their Opinions, by quitting them in a Manner that could not please them; they would not have failed to have reproached me with it, if, to avoid their Reproaches, I had not abandon'd them forever. This is a Detail which I am going to relate, without considering how to excuse myself for leaving them without bidding them adieu.

Monfieur *de Subarcas*, the Governor of *Acadie*, had freighted, in his Port, a Frigate, named the *Hind*; he afterwards address'd himself for Sailors, to form his Equipage, to Monfieur *Raudot*, the In-

ten-

tendant of *Canada*, and to Monsieur de *Vaudreuil*, who sent an Officer of *Quebec*, call'd *Vincelot*, to *Montreal*, with Orders to make this Levy. This Officer, when he arrived there, was informed that the surest Method of procuring some *Algonquins*, was to bring me into his Interest, and to engage me first myself : He made the Proposal to me, in a manner that did not suffer me to hesitate a Moment upon accepting it ; since he began by letting me understand, that, in this Frigate, we should continually cruize upon the Coasts of *New-England*, and that the more brave Men we had on board, the more considerable Captures we should make.

The eager Desire I had to be engaged in a War at Sea, where I imagined that every Day we should have Opportunities of coming to Action, made me employ all the Power I had over my Savages to oblige them to follow me ; but this was a still longer Voyage to make than that we had taken towards *Orange*, and the unfortunate Success of our Enterprize, which they had not had Time to forget, did not prejudice them in favour

of another. I could list no more than twenty, who only engaged themselves in this Affair out of Kindness to me, and agreed before their Departure that they should be subject only to my Command. They went further, armed with a Distrust which appeared to them well founded, they demanded Provision for themselves and for me, with the Liberty of going our own Route in particular, either before or after the *French* and the *Canadians*, who were preparing to depart, to the Number of one hundred and thirty, which was granted them.

It was towards the latter End of the Winter, and the Ice, which we had to break through continually, made us employ near a Month in our Voyage beyond our Calculation ; so that Monsieur *de Subarcas*, who, upon the News of our Departure, had several Times sent a Brigantine to take us over the *Streight*, or the *French Bay*, which separates *Acadie* from *New-England*, hearing that no Persons came, recall'd it to *Port-Royal*, and expected us no longer. Some Savages of that Place, who seeing us all gather'd together there, without knowing what

what Resolution to take, gave us this Account.

After having waited in our Turn, therefore, nine or ten Days, living upon the Fish that was left us by the Tides, we held a Council, the Result of which was, to chuse a calm Day, and to hazard some of our Party in one of our Canoes, to go and inform Monsieur *de Subarcas* of our Arrival. The Danger was so great, that none but those who were ignorant of it could have attempted it. It was a Passage of at least thirty Leagues, and if the Sea was ever so little disturb'd, it must swallow up the Men and the Canoe. The *Canadians*, who were sensible of the Danger, were not at all eager to expose themselves to it; they were transported when they heard that I was willing to run the Risque of such a Navigation, with five of my Savages. We embark'd all six in a little Canoe made of Bark, and dressed like *Algonquins*, and in this manner I first went to Sea.

By good Fortune for us, it was as calm as we could wish; the Poets would

have said, that the God of the Winds, in our Favour, had chain'd up his furious *Boreas*, we did not so much as feel the gentle Breezes of a *Zephyr*; the Surface of the Water was as smooth as Glass; and, to heighten our Prosperity, the Weather did not change; and, more fortunate than wise, we perform'd our Voyage without any unhappy Accident. Monsieur *de Subarcas*, charm'd with our Arrival, which seem'd almost a Miracle, receiv'd us with equal Joy and Surprise.

The *Hind* Frigate was still upon the Stocks; she was launch'd into the Water in our Presence, and the Manner in which that was perform'd was to my Savages, and even to myself, a Spectacle as new as it was entertaining. We were continually going into it, as well as into the Brigantine, which was in the Port; we admir'd the Construction of it, and so beautiful a Piece of Workmanship gave us a great Impatience to be at Sea, to see the manner of working these Vessels. In the mean Time Chance satisfied our Curiosity, by bringing into the Port a Vessel under Sail. We were
amaz'd

amaz'd at its Swiftnefs and its Lightnefs, for tho' it was almost as large as the new Frigate, it seem'd to fly upon the Surface of the Sea.

It was a Privateer Ship, the Captain of which, whose Name was *Morpain*, is now, I believe, Captain of one of the Ports upon the Coast of *Canada*. He came there for Wood and Water, and to sell the Prize he had taken from the *English*, and which consisted in two small Vessels loaded with Flour. Monsieur *de Subarcas* always look'd upon our Arrival, and the coming of this Ship, as an Assistance certainly sent by the good Genius of *France*, since eight Days after we saw come to an Anchor, within Sight of the Place, eight and twenty *English* Ships, who expected to have made themselves Masters of *Acadie* with great Ease.

To shew them we were in a Condition, or at least had a Resolution to oppose their Design, we had the Boldness to advance towards them, being about three or four hundred *Canadians* and Savages, Privateers, and Inhabitants of

the Country. But for two hundred Men, that we were at most on each Side, firing at their Shallops, they set ashore four or five thousand *English*, who soon made us retire. However, in our Retreat, we each of us made four or five Discharges at them, before they could drive us from behind the Trees, and oblige us to retreat farther ; so that beginning again to fire every five and twenty Paces we went, we kill'd a great Number of their Men ; and our Retreat, like those of the *Parthians*, was fatal to our Enemies.

The Governor, fearing that at length it might be difficult for us to regain the Place, sallied out to support us at the Head of his Garrison, composed of about a hundred Soldiers. We skirmished all together with the greatest Vigour, till perceiving our Cavalry dismounted, we thought proper to retire into the Town ; that is to say, after the Governor had lost his Horse, which was kill'd under him, and which was the only one we had in our Garrison.

During

During the first Days that the *English* kept us thus block'd up, they sent out Parties all along the Coasts, to pillage and to ravage the Country, that they might have some Profit from the Blockade ; but this did not long continue with Impunity. Captain *Baptiste*, a brave *Canadian*, tho' he had only forty Savages with him, soon obliged them to be upon their Guard ; he continually was surprizing some of their Troops, which he beat, and then shelter'd himself in the Woods ; and harrassing the Enemy thus, he kept them in a continual Alarm.

On our Side we also began to make some Sallies, the Baron *de St. Castin* with his Savages, and I with mine. This Gentleman was the Son of a *French* Barón and a Savage Woman, whom his Father had married when he was a Prisoner amongst the Savages, and he had a Bravery that went even to Temerity ; he was generally esteem'd and looked upon as an Officer of great Use to the Nation. He joined to his Valour all the Probity of a Man of Honour,

nour, and a most uncommon Merit ; he, as well as myself, took a Pride in being dressed like the Savages.

At length, the *English* considering that their Ravages cost them more Blood than compensated the Profit, recalled their Parties, and made some Attempts to carry the Place, but they were repulsed in every Assault they gave. Monsieur *de Subarcas* then found how much he wanted the Assistance of the Privateers, and the *Canadians* ; besides that, his Garrison was far from being numerous, they were so little used to War, that, but for us, they would not have held out four and twenty Hours ; the Soldiers in particular had so thoroughly lost all Hopes of being able to resist them any Time, that they thought of nothing but deserting, and the Officers had all the Trouble in the World to prevent them. One Day two of them deserted, who gave Occasion by their Flight to the Privateers Knowledge of me, and their Desire to have me one of their Company. The Adventure, in few Words, was thus :

The

The two Deserters having found Means to get out of the Place, without any Precipitation, before our Eyes, and in broad Day-light, turn'd their Steps towards the *English*. The Governor, who saw them desert so calmly, was irritated at their Behaviour, and expressed a great Desire to have them again, that they might be treated as they deserv'd. I enter'd into his Resentment, and offer'd to bring them back ; he made a Difficulty to take me at my Word, because of the Danger I must throw myself into to keep my Promise ; but, without staying to conquer his Repugnance by my Discourses, I chose three of the nimblest of my *Algonquins*, and following with them the Traces of the Soldiers, we passed with surprizing Swiftness at the Distance of fifty Paces from the Enemy, who fired upon us, and we overtook the Deserters, who had stopp'd to see us run. We seiz'd upon them in an Instant, and brought them back to the Governor, who had them beheaded that Moment ; at the same time he loaded me with Caresses, and gave me, publicly, Ap-

plausives, that my Violence made him repent a few Hours after.

To proportion the Recompence to the Service I had done him, he had the Goodness to assign to me and my Savages a copious Portion of Brandy and Provisions, which began to be distributed very sparingly. The Store-keeper, named *Degoutin*, who 'tis likely had had the same Employment in *France*, and who imagined he had still to do with *French* Soldiers, would have put fifteen Pounds upon us for twenty, and Bones for Flesh. I complained of it, he affronted me, and I, who was never very patient, gave him a Return with my Sabre, that put him out of a Condition of preventing me from giving myself good Weight and Measure.

This Action was immediately reported to the Governor, who came out with a furious Air, and flew to me with a Pistol in each Hand, swearing most terribly, that he would shoot that Man thro' the Head who durst be failing in their Respect to his Officers. His
Wrath

Wrath affrighted me so little, that I had the Rashness to swear at least as loud as himself, and to defy him to shoot: He was a Man likely enough to punish my Audaciousness, and I believe he would certainly have discharged his Pistols at me, if *Morpain* and some others of the Privateers had not held his Hands, and represented to him, that a Savage was excusable for being ignorant of the Laws of Military Discipline; and that if we learn'd them by degrees from his Soldiers, we might perhaps learn them in return to be faithful and intrepid.

These Reasons, or rather the Necessity he had of my Savages, who would have been cut to pieces to the last Man, or have revenged me, appeased him. He gave us a long Lesson upon our Duty; and told me afterwards, that he pardoned my Violence, because he was perswaded I would not have given way to it, if I had known that touching one of his Officers was attacking him himself, who represented the Person of the King. This was the glorious Action which made the Privateers desirous

desirous to have me with them ; they judged by that, that I was a rash Spirit that feared no Danger, and was incapable of submitting. In a word, I appeared worthy of augmenting the Number of the Privateers. However, they did not yet propose it to me.

The Enterprize which the *English* formed after this, had no better Success than the rest : They endeavoured, in vain, to burn the Vessels that were under the Cannon of the Place. So that finding themselves near wanting of Provision, and reflecting that we beat them with their own Weapons, by making use of the Flour which *Morpain* had carried off from them, and which was destined for their Fleet, they prudently resolved to retire.

They did not imagine us bold enough to dare to attack them in their Retreat ; and in this Confidence they were re-embarking with great Tranquility, when sallying briskly out of the Woods, we fell unawares upon eleven or twelve hundred Men ; who, whilst they were waiting for the Shallops, were pillaging
some

some Houses situated upon the Shore. We killed a great Number of them before they could put themselves into a Posture of Defence ; but they were not long before they did so, and were soon supported. We had then a very hot Action, in which we had the Misfortune to lose Monsieur *de Saleant*, one of our bravest Officers. The Baron *de St. Castin* was dangerously wounded, as was also Monsieur *de la Boularderie*.

Some Privateers, near whom I combated, remarked me with Pleasure in the Action ; they perceived, that after having broke my Sabre, I made use of the But-end of my Fuzil as a Club, without being daunted at a Musket Shot that I had received in my Thigh. This confirmed them in the good Opinion they had of my Courage, and they resolved to engage me upon any Terms into their Company. I discovered their Design by the Manner in which they applauded me to Monsieur *de Subarcas*, who to make me amends for the Loss of my Fuzil, which I had broke to pieces upon the Heads of the *English*, made me a Present of that he carried himself.

himself. The Fuzil was a very good one, and has been of Service to me upon many Occasions since.

Instead of employing the *Hind* Frigate to the Use for which it was first designed, Monsieur *de Subarcas* chose rather to send it into *France*, to carry the News of the Enterprize of the *English*; and he charged Monsieur *de la Konde*, with the Care of giving an Account of it to the Court. Several *Canadians* made this Voyage. As to me and my *Algonquins*, whatever Desire we had to go to Sea, we could not obtain Permission to do it; the Governor resolving to keep us till he had received an Answer from *France*, proposing not so much as to send us back into *Canada* till the End of the Summer, unless he received Orders to the contrary. I complained openly of this Procedure, saying, that I had engaged myself in order to cruize upon the Coasts of *New-England* only, and not to be shut up in a Town and increase the Garrison.

The Privateers blew the Flame, and represented to us that we should be
made

made a Jest of in *Canada*, if they saw us return in four Months under the Wing of our Fathers and Mothers, after having bid them adieu for so long. They harangued to me in particular; and boasted to me of every thing in their Condition that was most likely to flatter my Inclinations. What is most agreeable amongst us, said they, is that every one is an Officer, and labours only for himself. We are all equal, and our Captain has no other Privilege than that of having two Voices in our Councils; though to speak as it truly is, his Vote goes no further than another's, or rather he has no Vote at all; for if the Question is to resolve whether we shall attack a Ship or not, the Alternative is not in his Choice, and he must necessarily declare for the Attack, or be obliged to fight against his own Opinion. You have seen us under Arms, added they, and you may have remarked how gallantly we used them. Is it necessary to come to Action? we behave like brave Fellows: Do we want an Opportunity of exercising our Valour? Laughing, Drinking, Gaming, they are then our Occupations.

pations. Perhaps you may be surprized that our Vessels are so small ; but consider that makes them the swifter, and we chuse them thus to come up the more easily with those we design to attack. If you are willing to share our Fortune, you shall see that we are not terrified at the largest Vessels : With our Frigates of six, or eight Guns, we often carry off Vessels of Fifty, and manned with two or three hundred Men. And why ? because without cannonading we board them directly, and then one brave Officer is worth twenty Soldiers.

You may have observed too, pursued they, by the Flour that we sold to the Governor, that in the Prizes we take we pay scarce a Tenth to the Admiralty, and all the rest is ours. As soon as we have made ourselves Masters of a Vessel, we divide the Merchandizes at the Foot of the Main-Mast, when that is feasible ; and when it is not, we send our Capture to the first Port to be sold, and divide the Prize. We are not sorry then for being but a small Number. The fewer the Shares, the larger they are ; and as to the rest,
it

it has always been found that you never want Men upon boarding a Ship, if the Hands you have are valiant; and though we are seldom very numerous when we attack, yet we always do it without being under Covert, and without retrenching ourselves as they do upon all other Vessels.

All these Discourses and many others that the Privateers were continually holding to me to debauch me, at length inspired me with a Desire of exercising their Profession with them. I promised to join them the Day of their Departure, the most privately I could, because Monsieur *de Subarcas*, who had a Suspicion of our Plot, had forbid them to carry me off with them, under the Penalty of losing what remained due to them upon the Flour, and which he was to pay them in Letters of Exchange.

I was accustomed continually to pass two or three Days in the Woods with some of my Savages, or wandering along the Coast to make Discoveries. When I knew the Day on which the
Vessel

Vessel was to depart, and the Place where I was to expect it, I took Provisions for several Days, and went out as usual with nine or ten of my *Algonquins*, whom I carried to the Place that was appointed me. As soon as I had found it by the Signs that had been given me, I made them return again with me towards *Port-Royal*, wandering through the Woods that I might be able to escape them. I own this was a melancholly Moment to me. When I considered that I was going to leave those Friends whose Lives were devoted to my Service, I sighed with Grief; and notwithstanding the Harshness of my Nature, I felt myself almost as much afflicted as a Father whom Necessity obliges to quit his Children.

I had about thirty or forty Pistoles in the Money of the Country, that is, in Cards signed by the Governor and the Intendant: I had a great Mind to give it to them; but I did not know how to manage it. At last I thought of saying to one of them, that I had imprudently taken these Cards out with me, which were troublesome, and that

I desired he would carry them for me ; after which, stopping by a Tree, I desired them to go on softly, which they did, thinking I would follow them immediately. As soon as I had lost sight of them, I returned to the Place where the Privateers had appointed our Rendezvous, and I concealed myself to wait for their Arrival.

It was in a little Island twelve or fifteen Leagues from *Port-Royal*. The Sun was beginning to set, when I discovered the Vessel of the Privateers ; it was time it should appear. Moved with the Inquietude I was certain my poor Savages felt for me, I pitied them, and was several times tempted to go to them again into the Wood. I am persuaded they passed the Night in search of me, with the most dreadful Shrieks and Howlings. Be that as it will, as soon as I saw my new Companions appear, I ceased to reflect upon the others, and thought only how I might distinguish myself by my Actions amongst the Privateers.

The

The first thing they said to me, was that the Governor was so pleased at seeing them go away without me, that he had dispatched them their Letters of Exchange with all the Complaisance imaginable. This furnished us with a glorious Opportunity of laughing at his Expence. I should soon have perceived, if I had not been convinced of it before, that I could never be with Mortals of a Nature more suitable to my own. They dressed me in their Privateering Regimentals, and all clubb'd together to make a Purse for me, that I might play with them; for indeed what could we do at Sea if we did not game? I easily accustomed myself to it, and from thence took Birth and Root in me that cursed Passion for Play, which I can never flatter myself with being able to conquer.

I was a perfect Comedy to these worthy Gentlemen at first by my Ignorance, and by the docile Simplicity with which I executed every thing that they told me must be done: The Desire of learning to be a Seaman made me capable of doing any thing; I remember, for Example, that they had the Malice to
make

make me torment myself for a Quarter of an Hour to prevent the Ship from leaning on one Side ; as if the Weight of my Body could produce the same Effect upon this great Vessel as upon my little Canoe. Luckily I never gave into the same Folly twice ; and in a Fortnight after our Embarkation, I was as wise as the rest.

One Day, to divert themselves only, they wanted to see whether I was quarrelsome in my Liquor ; and remarking that I did not love Wine, they made me drink Brandy. I swallowed this Liquor without Repugnance, and soon brought myself into the Condition they wish'd to have me. By degrees, as the Vapours of the Brandy obscured my Reason, I began to grow immoderately gay. This obliged some of the Brotherhood to attack me with their Sea-railery. They affected to say disobliging things to me, and to insult me. I was provoked in earnest, and leaping upon them with my Cutlafs drawn, I do not know what might have happened, if some of the Privateers, who kept their Eyes upon me, had not seized me behind,

hind, and tied me fast, till my Fury and my Drunkenness was over. What was most unfortunate in this Scene was, that I had given a Cut upon the Face to a Privateer who was much beloved by the whole Company, tho' he was a *Spaniard*. I was very much concerned at it, when I found that all this had been only a Scene concerted amongst my Comrades. Such is generally the Conclusion of these mad Jests of inconsiderate Youth ; they degenerate into serious Misfortune.

I burned with Impatience to meet a Vessel that we might come to Action. I was very curious to see in what manner I should succeed in a Naval Combat, and I owned frankly to the Privateers that if they made me remain much longer in Inaction, they would force me to regret my Savages. However, notwithstanding the Itch I had to be boarding an Enemy, near a Month passed without the least Occasion offering itself ; at length, however, we met with an *English* Frigate, of four and twenty Guns, and a hundred and thirty Men.

I had not been much surprized, when I heard publick Prayers, Morning and Evening, on board our Vessel; but I was so beyond all Imagination, when I heard our whole Equipage begin to chaunt the *Salve Regina* very heartily. In effect, that Prayer was very suitable for twenty of our Company, who were killed in about half an Hour, during which we remained exposed to the Cannon Shot and Muskets of the *English*, without being able to board them; but as soon as we got Footing upon their Deck we terminated the Affair in a Moment, and for five Men that we lost they had above sixty dispatched, and the rest yielded.

Morpain and his Brethren were convinced then, that they were not mistaken, when they had done me the Honour to suppose me endowed with the Qualities requisite for a Privateer; for I was one of the first to leap on board the Enemy, and throw myself into the midst of the *English*, whom I did no great Harm to, however, because they did not give me time, they saluting me
imme-

immediately with a Musket-shot, accompanied with the Thrust of a Sword, which I received thro' my Body. These two Wounds stopped me short; and hindered me from proving my Valour any farther. We had eight or nine of our People more who were wounded, the Enemies having made two or three Discharges of their Fire-Arms upon us thro' the Scuttles, before they brought too *.

'Tis the Custom amongst the Privateers that every one has his Sailor, whom he calls his Friend, his Brother, or his Partner; this Sailor serves him in his Illnesses, sits up with him, and takes care of him, and if he dies becomes his Heir. If I had lost my Life I should not have much enriched my Partner, our Shares being very inconsiderable; the Capture was not worth what she cost us. We sold her at the † *Port de Paix*, in the Island of *St. Domingo*.

Upon

* That is, Lowering their Flag, as a Sign that they yield.

† This is only a large Village upon the North Coast of the Island, but it has a very commodious Port.

Upon my Arrival in that Country, I was amazed at the Heat I felt there, having never so much as heard of the Torrid Zone. As soon as I found myself recovered of my Wounds, and able to go out, I went to walk upon the Port, where I was informed that a Native of *Montreal* was established some Leagues from thence, in a very handsome Habitation. They named him to me; I knew his Family, and proposed to myself going there, and to pass some Days with him, to see if it was not cooler up in the Country than it was in the Town. Our Captain had me conducted thither, after having assured me that it would be above a Month before we should be in a Condition to put to Sea again. He supposed so; but the very next Day after my Departure, having been informed, that an *English* Vessel, with a *French* Prize in Tow, had passed within Sight of the Port, he informed himself of her Route, and immediately pursued her, without staying for me, or so much as letting me know it; so that returning to the *Port de Paix*, in about a Fortnight, I found them gone.

I had heard that they were sometimes two or three Months at Sea, without stopping at any Port. Besides that, I was not of a Humour to remain so long idle, I was ignorant whether the Vessel of *Morpain* was to return to Harbour in this Port. However, I had the Patience to wait there as long as my Money lasted; after which my Host advised me to take my Route to the *Cape*, which is about fifteen Leagues from thence, telling me there were always some of the Privateers there; and that very often there were several of them together came to refresh themselves there.

I departed for the *Cape*; I had not, I remember, any Arms but my Cutlafs, nor any Wardrobe but my Shirt and my Breeches, and a little Waistcoat which had been formerly white as well as the rest, but had got a grey Dye, which I soon made it lose in the first Brook I met in my Way. Having whitened my Linnen thus, I continued my Journey, leaving the drying of me to the Care of the hot Sun. Towards the close of the Day, I perceived six Cavaliers, who appeared to be taking
the

the Air in the Plain. They approached me, and began to question me. I told them frankly who I was, and where I was going. They thereupon informed me, that it would be very dangerous for me to go my Journey on Foot. That I should find several Rivers which I could not swim across, without exposing myself to be devoured by the monstrous Fishes *, with which they abounded. I fear no Fishes, *Messieurs*, replied I, I swim as well as they do, and they have no Cutlafs as I have.

This Answer, and several others that I made them, inspired them with a Desire of keeping me with them for some Time, and doing me Service, as I found afterwards. The principal of these Gentlemen was a Captain of the Coasts, named *Remouffin*, born a *Creolian*, as was his Wife; and most of those who were with him were his Relations. He possessed great Riches, and his Habitation contained a little Colony of Negroes.

Monsieur de Remouffin invited me very complaisantly to make some Stay
E 2 with

* These Fishes are called *Caymans*.

with him ; and seeing that I excused myself,—at least, said he to me, remain with us till To-morrow. I can't suffer a Man of Honour, as you seem to be, to pass the Night in the open Air so near my House. It was to no purpose for me to tell them, that bred up from my Infancy among the Savages, I was accustomed to lay upon the Ground ; my Resistance was in vain. Two of these Gentlemen dismounted, and put me up by force behind Monsieur *de Remoussin*. I had no need of their Assistance, nor even of a Stirrup to mount, if I had had a Mind ; but I was out of Countenance, and did not know what Resolution to take. They embarrass'd me more by their Civilities, than they would have done if they had attack'd me all six at once.

When you find yourself in an unknown Country, with utter Strangers, you can't guess whether their Caresses are a Prelude to the Good or Harm they design to do you. According to the different People, some will surprize and convey you to Death, by the same Methods that others employ for your Assistance.

sistance. This is an Embarrass that I have been often in ; and to speak frankly upon this Occasion, I was not without Distrust. Though these People, thought I, speak *French*, they are perhaps *English* Men, who design to lay me in Irons, or put me cruelly to Death ; however, if they would but declare themselves my Enemies, I should kill some one or other of them, and I should die satisfied.

I believed, however, that there were none in that Country but *French* and *Spaniards*, whose Interests were then united : But then I remembered that the Privateers had told me, that notwithstanding the Alliance of the two Nations, I must be upon my Guard against the latter, who would sometimes poniard a Man whilst they embraced him.

At some Moments I imagined I might be fallen into the Hands of Robbers ; and when I fixed upon that Thought, I did not find they had any great occasion to rejoice at this Encounter, since my whole Treasure consisted

sifted of about thirty *Sols* *, which was to have carried me the fourteen Leagues I had to go.

The Habitation to which they conveyed me was at no great Distance, we soon arrived there: Here, Ladies, here, cried Monsieur *de Remoussin*, calling his Wife and some Friends who were with her: Here is a curious Savage that I have brought you. Without going into *Canada* you shall see an *Iroquese*, but an *Iroquese* that will not frighten you. At the Name of *Iroquese*, these Ladies forming to themselves the Idea of a Monster not unlike their Negroes, advanced to view me; and it was not without Astonishment, that they saw a tall, well-looking Youth, fair and light-hair'd, as most of the *Canadians* are.

Though at the Sight of these amiable Persons I was something reassured, and began to think I was with People of Consideration; yet I addressed myself to them with an Air that was a little too much upon the *Iroquese*. But they must excuse me, I was not a very proper Person

* Thirty *Sols* is about 2 s. 6 d.

son for conversing with the Fair Sex. However, being obliged to answer the Questions the Ladies made me concerning *Canada*, the Savages, and their Manner of Living, I found they were not difficult to be pleased. I even perceived that I diverted them extremely, notwithstanding the Freedoms of Speech with which I enlivened my Narration. They found a Frankness and Simplicity in my Discourse that delighted them.

A splendid Supper was served up. There wanted nothing for me to have been charmed with the Repast, but the Permission of drinking clear Water. But all the Guests made me drink Wine after their Example ; which they did in so engaging a Manner that I could not excuse myself, whatever Dislike I had to that Liquor. It inspired me with so much Vivacity, that the Company having testified their Curiosity to know why I had abandoned the *Iroquese*, and afterwards left *Canada* ; they had reason to be satisfied with the Account I gave them of it. Above all, I gave them a Detail of the Siege of *Port-Royal*, with

Raptures, and the attacking the *English* Ship and taking it, without omitting the least Circumstances : What pleased them the most was, that at every Sentence I cried, *Oh ! I shall go to Sea again directly* ; and this Burthen of my Discourse made the Company laugh excessively.

Madame *de Remoussin*, surprized to see me in so early an Age so bent upon War, reproached me with it, asking me maliciously, how many of the *English* I had eat since I cruized the Seas ; not doubting, said she, but I was warlike enough to follow the Customs of the Savages, who say, that a conquered Enemy personally augments their Provisions. I was sensible that I deserved this Stroke of Raillery, and that, in effect, it was wrong in me to make such dreadful Descriptions before the Ladies. But it is a constant Rule, that every Man loves to speak well of his own Profession. I was, however, afterwards something more reserved.

When we arose from Table, Monsieur *de Remoussin* conducted me himself into
an

an Apartment, where he said me, here is your Chamber and your Bed; you stand in need of Repose, and you may enjoy it here as quietly as if you was in your own Family. They will bring you what is necessary to pass the Night, and if you want any thing more, you have nothing to do but to ask for it freely. He went out after saying this, and two Negresses came and made the Bed; they afterwards presented to me a Shirt, a Night Cap, and a Towel, whilst two Negroes, who had brought a Bason of clean Water, kept continually bawling to me, *Wash, Master, wash*: As I was not used to such Ceremonies, I looked very attentively upon upon the Negroes without making them any Answer. They took my Silence for a Consent, and were beginning to undress me, but not at all pleased with the Assiduity of my *Valets de Chambre*, I was preparing to give them their Dismission, and turn them out of the Door, when Monsieur *de Remoussin*, who heard the Dispute into his Apartment, came to ask me why I made so many Ceremonies. I told him, that not being able to return such great Favours, it was sufficient for me to pass

the Night in one of his Negroe's Huts, that I might not be troublesome, and might depart by Break of Day.

You reckon without your Host, replied he, if you propose to leave us Tomorrow; it is what I shall not permit in the least. We know too well the Dangers you would be exposed to in pursuing your Journey. If you will absolutely go to the *Cape*, instead of waiting here for your Companions, I promise to carry you there myself speedily in my *Pirogue* *. In the meantime, added he, putting eight or ten *Louis d'Ors* into my Pocket, here is something to divert you with, and to play with us if you like it. In fine, look upon me as your Brother, and make yourself easy.

This generous and noble Behaviour of the Master made me receive the Services of the Slaves without any farther Ceremony, and letting the Negroes do

* A Kind of Shallop often made only of the Trunk of a Tree, especially in *South America*. These Pirogues are very swift, and some them will carry upwards of fifty People.

do what they pleased, I was soon undressed, washed, scrubb'd, and put to Bed: I may say with Truth, that the next Day, and all the following, I was treated like a perfect spoil'd Child. Both the Ladies and Gentlemen endeavoured who should caress me most, and who should be most obliging to me; this made me sensible of the Difference there is between the Assistance that can be expected from Savages, and what an unfortunate Stranger finds from a civilized and a humane Nation, as the *French* are in general, and particularly in the *American* Islands.

Not being accustomed to the excessive Heat of the Climate, I was generally left with the Ladies, whilst their Husbands mounted on Horseback, and made their Patrole upon the Coasts. The Habitation was a perfect Seraglio to these unfortunate Women; they saw none but their Husbands, and with them they had Rivals in their Negresses. Some of *Madame de Remoussin's* Relations, who perceived it but too plainly, complained pretty loudly; but they had to do with Gentle-

Gentlemen who did not give themselves much Concern upon that Head.

One of these neglected Spouſes, who I preſume ſuffered with more Impatience than the reſt this Alienation of her Rights, caſt her Eye upon me by way of Reprimand. She made me all the Advances that a Woman of Faſhion can make, who is carrying on a Deſign ſhe is aſhamed of; but I was then ſo uninſtructed in that Article, that ſhe muſt have ſpoke extremely plain to have made me underſtand her: She would often take me aſide, and preſs my Hand in her's; and looking very languiſhing upon me, pity me for the Inconveniencies I felt from the Heat of the Climate; ſhe ſighed over the Wounds I had received in attacking the *Engliſh* Ship, and exhorted me tenderly not to expoſe myſelf thus any more. Is it not a Pity, ſaid ſhe to me, ſo young and ſo amiable as you are, that you have embraced the moſt dangerous, and moſt toiliſome Profeſſion. Should not you rather chuſe to remain with us in this charming Solitude, than to expoſe yourſelf to ſo many Dangers? I am perſwaded, added ſhe,

she, that you would have a better Taste than our Spouses, and that you would prefer us to the Negresses. Speak, *Monfieur de Beauchene*, is it not true, that we are better than them? I confess to all these Questions, which gave me very fair Play, I knew how to make no other Answer than *Yes, Madame; No, Madame; You are very good indeed, Madame.*

Most of my Readers doubtless will say, that I acted the Part of a Block-head here; I agree to it; but some perhaps may cry out, Oh! valuable Ignorance! Oh! too happy Simplicity! What is absolutely certain is, that if I had violated the Laws of Hospitality, by taking an Advantage of the Weakness that was testified, *Monfieur de Remouffin*, and his Relations, would have been very capable of punishing me for it. However that might have been, now, when I recal this Adventure to my Memory, the only thing I reproach myself with, is my having several Times afterwards repented that I was so honest a Man.

The Lady, who had so unprofitably tried her Power upon me, did not fail to tell the others, that she believed me insensible to Love. They all thought the same Thing of me. Some of them laughed at it, but some of them said very seriously, 'Tis a Pity. This appeared a great Defect to them in a Youth of my Figure ; they talked of it to their Husbands ; at last the Report spread amongst the Negroes, and I soon became, without perceiving it, the Discourse of the whole Family.

For the Punishment of my Sins, a cursed Negress, who served Madame *de Remoussin* as her Woman, offered to revenge the Ladies of my Insensibility ; she boasted that she should be able to give me a Taste for the Sex. All the Company applauded this Enterprize, which appeared worthy of Reward ; four Gentlemen promised each of them a *Louis d'Or* to the Undertaker if she succeeded. Oh ! People of this World, how difficult is it for Innocence to be preserved long amongst you !

The

The Negrefs lost no Time ; that very Evening, this Minister of *Satan* behaving to me as she thought suited to a Savage and a Privateer, she came into my Chamber in the Night. Monsieur *de Remoussin* and his Friends were listening at the Door. She approached the Bed very impudently, and addressing her Speech to me, Monsieur, the *Canadian*, said she to me, I have perceived that you are in Love with me, and I shall not let you languish any longer. This audacious Preface, if I had been thoroughly awake, would have been more likely to assist my Virtue than corrupt it. I should undoubtedly have repulsed the Caresses of this impudent Wretch, whose Deformity I knew ; but I was half asleep, and by consequence have but a very confused Idea of the Reception I gave her.

In the mean Time the Gentlemen, who supposed they had not given their Money for nothing, were incessantly laughing amongst themselves at the Trick they had played me. The next Day, whilst we were at Dinner, they began to rally the Ladies, upon their
not

not having found out the Art of pleasing their Guest. Really, Ladies, said Monsieur *de Remoussin* to them, I think you ought to have spared us the Trouble of finding out Amusements to detain him in our Habitation : It is a Shame for you, that your Charms alone had not the Power of rendering it agreeable to him. What consoles us, replied Madame *de Remoussin* laughing, is that the Heart of the Chevalier is accessible only to Glory ; 'tis a Conquest denied to Love. If he is insensible to our Worth, added another of the Ladies, at least he does not do us the Injustice to prefer such Monsters to us as your Mistresses are.

You have too bad an Opinion of the Chevalier, said one of the Men, I judge more favourably of him. I will lay any Wager that these Monsters don't displease him, and that he gives, as we do, the Prize to the *African Venus*. No, that I don't, cried I, in an abrupt Tone ! I must have lost my Senses and my Eyes, to be capable of making such a Choice ; and I cannot believe that any Man in the World can think such odious Creatures agreeable. You hear him, Ladies,

Ladies, resumed Monsieur *de Remoussin*, you ought to think yourselves obliged to the Chevalier for what he says here; for he only speaks thus out of Complaisance and Consideration for you. No, Monsieur, replied I, I think I ought to know my own Mind best; and once more I declare, I don't love those infernal Beauties, nor never shall love them.

At this Reply Monsieur *de Remoussin* calling to the Negress who had seduced me,— Approach *Angoletta*, said he to her, come and confound the Chevalier. Tell us the Truth, Child, and you shall not have the least Harm done you; but if you dissemble it, I will have you tied to a Post, and have fifty good Lashes applied to you: What passed last Night between this Gentleman and you? Upon this *Angoletta*, in a trembling Voice, made the Recital of her Nocturnal Adventure, and said a great deal more than was true. The Ladies, who knew the Nymph to be a Person accustomed to play such Parts, would not do me the Honour to believe me, whatever I could say to them, to persuade them that the Negress had related a

Fic-

Fiction. My Embarrass, the Surprise of the Women, and the Laughter of the Men, formed a Scene that was not unentertaining. As to me, I had no Inclination to laugh, I could willingly have strangled the impudent Devil that was the Cause of my Confusion. If I had had the most inexcusable Fault to reproach myself with, it might have been thoroughly expiated by my Shame. I was two or three Days before I durst look the Ladies in the Face ; and this Jest was the Occasion of an Accident that gave me an Illness, of which I must have inevitably died, but for the extraordinary Care that was taken of me.

Not being able now to resolve upon keeping the Ladies Company, when their Husbands were absent, I walked about by myself in the Grounds. In my Walks I gathered Oranges and eat them, and eat so great a Quantity one Day, that in the Night I had a Fever, with a dreadful Flux ; my Stomach too began to swell, in the manner it does with those who first come from *France* into the Islands : When they perceived it was the Disorder which is called in that
Coun-

Country, *The Stomach Illness*, they brought me two of the strongest Negroes, who taking me under the Arms, made me walk by force, and forced me along through very rough Ways, and up several Hills. Without this toilsome Exercise, which is the only Remedy in this Disease, the Patient falls involuntarily into a Dose, during which his Legs and his Body swell, and he seldom recovers it.

Besides the Negroes who walked me about all the Day, there was obliged to be others to watch me in the Night, and they had as much Employment as the first. They were obliged to hold me down by Force, and sometimes to tie me; or I should have wounded, or perhaps killed myself, in these Excesses, which were generally very violent. In my Deliriousness I was boarding a Ship, and presently, I was hunting with the *Iroquese*. At the End of one of these Fits, being come to myself again, I perceived the Negress *Angoletta* sitting by my Bed. In my first Movement of Passion I was tempted to feign, that the Fit was not yet over, and to seize upon her,

her, and revenge myself sufficiently for the Trick she had played me. I had even already begun to cry out, in the *Iroquefe* Language, *Thetiath beghein kahoonrai, kahoonrai, acistab* *; but remarking that the poor Wretch was very assiduous in endeavouring to help me, I could not resolve to return her Services so ill.

The Negroes, who were watching all Night with me, were incapable of working in the Day, which was a Prejudice to Monsieur *de Remoussin*. Happily my Illness was of no long Duration, and by degrees I recovered. Penetrated with the Attentions and Goodness of my Host and Hostess, and the Kindness of their whole Family, I believe I should have renounced the Sea for ever, to live always with them, if *Morpain* had not come to anchor at the *Port de Paix*. He sent several Privateers to enquire after me; I was too near the Town for his Enquiries to be in vain; besides, nothing was more talked of every where than the *Iroquefe* of Monsieur *de Remoussin*. Two of my Comrades, therefore,

* That is, *To Arms, Brethren, to Arms.*

fore, soon arrived at his Habitation, and appeared transported with Joy at seeing me again.

Tho' their Arrival was not very agreeable to the Family, since they came to force me from them, yet they were very well received. Such was the Kindness that had been conceived for me, that my Departure afflicted them all; I cannot think of it still without being mov'd. No Creature would bid me adieu. Monsieur *de Remoussin* only had the Courage to see me depart. I protested to him, that I would never forget what he had done for me: I told him, that I had nothing to offer him but my Sword, but if he should ever stand in need of that, or of those of the whole Ship, I begged him to depend upon them: That I should all my Life think it my Duty to shed the last Drop of my Blood for him. What I exact from you, my dear Chevalier, said he, with his Eyes filled with Tears, is never to forget me, and to let us hear of you as often as it is possible. I wish you never may have Occasion for it, added he, but whatever is your Fate, look upon my House always

ways as your own : Pronouncing these Words he embraced me tenderly, and we parted. To compleat his Generosity, he had me conveyed to the Port *de Paix*, with four Horses ; one loaded with Linnen and Cloaths for my own Use, and the others with Oranges, Wine, Brandy, and other Refreshments for our Vessel.

Morpain was transported to find me the same that he had left me ; I mean, fully disposed to share with him in any new Dangers. There appeared to me to be great Changes on Board, I saw all strange Faces : 'Tis the Fate of the Privateers ; they seldom grow old in their Profession. *Morpain* informed me, that my first Companions had almost all perished in three Combats, in which he had taken three several Prizes ; and that he was searching every where for brave Fellows to supply their Places.

As it was not my Fault that I had not combated with them, I had my Share as well as the rest in the Captures that had been made ; they were pretty considerable, and I was not a little surprized

ed to find myself rich so suddenly. I thought that Heaven had sent me all this Wealth, that I might testify my Gratitude to *Monsieur de Remoussin*. I made an Exchange of some Moveables that had fallen to me, for a Gold Watch that fell to one of my Companions: I put it into a small Basket, under a *Rouleau* of twenty *Louis d'Ors*; and sent it to *Monsieur de Remoussin* by a Tradesman, who I knew did all his Business at the Port, and who took care to inform him of all that passed there.

I had charged my Commissioner to say we were departed, and that he had seen us at a great distance from the Port before he left it; but he did not obey me. For he brought me back my Basket the same Evening, with a long Letter, in which *Monsieur de Remoussin* reproached me for this Procedure, which made him fear, he said, that I had not received the Marks of his Friendship with the same Pleasure as he had given them. He sent me word, however, that not to refuse every Thing, he had accepted the Watch. This was true; but

but he had put in the Place of it five and twenty *Louis d'Ors*, and that was more than its Value. In fine, it was writ in the Book of Fate that I should have all the Obligations upon Earth to this worthy Man, without ever being able afterwards to testify my Gratitude to him ; for in all my Cruizes upon the Sea, after that time, I never had an Opportunity to harbour at the Port *de Paix*, though I wished it excessively*.

Four or five Days after I had rejoined *Morpain*, his Vessel was in a Condition to depart. We went to cruize upon the Coasts of *Jamaica*, and took several Prizes during the five Months that we remained there. We sold the last at *Petit Goave*, of which the Count *de Choiseul* was then Governor. It was a Vessel loaded with *Madeira* Wines ; which was a very agreeable Capture, both to the Governor and the whole Country. We were obliged to lay by several Months to refit our Vessels, which were
but

* When I arrived at *Nantz* in 1712, I was informed by some Natives of *St. Domingo*, that he was then lately dead : I regretted him more than I should have done a Father.

but in a bad Condition. During that Time, Monsieur *de Choiseuil*, to occupy us, resolved to let us make some Cruizes under an old celebrated Privateer, who had retired from the Sea to live peaceably in a rich Habitation which he had not far from *Petit Goave*. This was the famous *Montauban*, who in the late War had conveyed into *Bourdeaux* five *English* Prizes that enriched the whole City.

Monsieur *de Choiseuil* found it difficult to persuade *Montauban* out of his Retreat; either because this Privateer now wished only for Repose, or that he had a Foreboding of what was to happen to him. However, he suffered himself to be persuaded. He accepted the Commission, together with a handsome Frigate of fourteen Guns; Monsieur *de Choiseuil*, who had her in the Port, made him a Present of her. She was called the *Nero*; we no sooner knew that *Montauban* was again to put to Sea, but we almost all engaged ourselves with this Hero of the Privateers. We set sail to the Sound of Trumpets, and with a Discharge of all the Cannons of the

F

Place.

Place. It seemed as if we were certain of Victory.

Upon our Route towards the Island of *Jamaica*, passing within Sight of a little Port called *la Quaye de St. Louis*, we discovered a *Spanish* Vessel which had harboured there to escape an *English* Man of War, that had given him chase for two or three Hours. This *Spanish* Ship was of forty Guns, and very weak in Hands, though she was loaded with Piaftres. They did not indeed think they should have made their Voyage alone, having been driven from their Convoy by a Storm. The Captain sent to demand of us, if we would escort him to the *Havanna*, offering us for that Service whatever Sum we pleased. We answered him, after having held a little Council upon it, that a Voyage to the *Havanna* would carry us too far out of our Way, and put us out of our Designs, for the Execution of which we had a Time prefix'd; that we were going to cruize upon the Coasts of *Jamaica*, and all that we could do to serve him, was to conduct him to
the

the Port of *Sant Jago*, upon the Coast of *Cuba*; or perhaps to *Santo Spirito*.

The *Spanish* Captain accepted our Offers, and *Montauban*, who was well known by most of his Crew, swore upon his Honour, that till they were in a Place of Safety he would never quit them, but to pursue any of the *English* whom Chance should throw in his Way; and that in this Case he only exacted from them the Complaisance of waiting for us, promising that he would rejoin them after our Expedition was finished. The *Spaniards* charmed at having us for the Defenders of their *Piaftres*, sailed briskly along in our Company, giving us a thousand Demonstrations of Gratitude; and to engage us the more to be faithful to them, there passed not a Day but they regaled us on board them in our Turns.

One Night the Misty Weather had driven us from them a considerable Way, and the next Day at Ten o'Clock in the Morning, when we saw them again, we remarked they were not twice the Distance of a Cannon-Shot from an *Eng-*

lish Frigate of six and thirty Guns. When we had rejoined the *Spaniards*, they told us they had made a Feint of coming up with the *English* ; but that in reality they had no Inclination to it.

As to us, we did not make so many Ceremonies ; we pursued the *English* Vessel, and came up to her in a very short Time, though she was a good Sailor. I must do the *Spanish* Captain Justice : He did all that was possible to follow us, and run the Hazard of the Combat with us. We had on board four *Spaniards*, with whom we had passed the Night at play. At first they were not idle Spectators ; but they soon became so when they saw in a Moment twenty Privateers upon the Deck of the Frigate, dispatching the *English* with so much Vigour, that without being supported by our Brethren, or the *Spanish* Vessel which had drawn near, we soon constrained them to bring to. The four Senior *Caviljeros* who were on board us, told their Captain after the Action, that we were Devils and not Men. The best Part of our Prize consisted of one hundred and fifty Negroes, whom we
sent

sent to be sold at *St. Louis*, though we received no Profit from them, since we never heard any more either of them or the Vessel that carried them.

As we had shewn the *Spaniards* our Manner of Attacking, we had not long after an Opportunity of convincing them, that a Parole of Honour is not less sacred amongst the Privateers, than it is amongst politer Soldiers. One Day one of our Companions, whose Name I have forgot, having heated his Brain by Drinking on board the *Spaniard*, told us, when he returned to our Vessel, that if we would follow his Advice, we might make our Fortunes at once, without exposing ourselves to the least Hazard. Upon this we asked him in what Manner? By carrying off the *Spanish* Vessel, replied he, that we are escorting. We will retire with it to *Bouca-tor*, after we have dispatched the Crew.

Montauban at this Discourse looked fixedly upon us all, as if to read in our Looks what we thought of such a Proposition; and though there was not one

among us that did not appear incensed at it—Gentlemen, said he to us, I give you up the Place you have entrusted me with, if I must be a Witness of this Treason's being proposed with Impunity; set me a-shore only upon the first Coast, 'tis all the Favour I beg of you. Why should you quit us, Monsieur, replied we all, is there any one here that approves this Perfidy that gives you Horror? 'Tis for that base Wretch who was capable of conceiving such a Thought to separate from us; let him go and seek his Accomplices elsewhere. We deliberated immediately upon the Treatment we should give this Wretch, and it was agreed that we should immediately set him a-shore without delay; we even swore, that none of us would ever after receive him into any Privateer Ship. We steered directly to the Coast of *Cuba*, and four Men putting him into the Shallop, carried him a-shore directly at the *Cape de la Croix*; where he was left armed only with his Cutlass, and without any other Provisions than those he had in his Stomach.

The

The *Spaniards*, far from suspecting the Reason why we used our Companion thus, interceded strongly for him. They pressed us in vain to inform them what he had done. They were not intrusted till they came within sight of the Port, when *Montauban* himself told it in confidence to the Captain at their parting; not having thought proper to tell it him before, lest it should give him some Disgust. The *Spaniards*, to whom their Captain revealed this Secret, made us much more considerable Presents than what we could have expected from them; and were so satisfied with our Procedure to the traiterous Privateer, that they spread the Report of that Action through all the Islands with infinite Praises, as if an honest Man could deserve Applause for barely doing his Duty.

We continued to cruize upon these Seas for above two Months longer; we had during that time many leisure Moments, which we used to spend in our usual Diversions of Drinking and Gaming, and sometimes in hearing *Montau-*

ban relate what he knew of the Privateering History of the late War. The Relations he gave us of it enchanted us ; amongst the rest, we took a particular Pleasure in the Detail of the Fights he had been in, in which he had performed Prodigies of Valour. Gentlemen, said he to us one Day, whilst I was at the Head of a Set of brave Privateers like you, I can assure you there did not pass a Year in which I did not see almost my whole Company renewed. This must not surprize you ; for you may lay two to one, that a Privateer never compleats three Campaigns.

Therefore, my Friends, pursued he, I advise you by my Example to set yourselves Bounds, and to retire as soon as you have got any thing. When I recall to Mind all the Dangers to which I have been exposed, I look upon myself as a Man singular in my kind, to have been so fortunate as to preserve my Life till now. After what I have told you, you will blame me, perhaps, for making this new Enterprize with you ; but *Monsieur de Choiseuil* has an absolute Power
over

over me : He intreated me to give him this Mark of my Consideration for him ; and I could not refuse him. It was not Avarice most certainly that made me quit the Pleasures and the Ease I enjoyed in my peaceable Retreat ; and it was still less with a Desire of rendering my Name more famous, that I came to confront once more the Dangers attending such Campaigns ; they are like Marriages, once is sufficient to run the risk. If you are so fortunate as to bury two Wives, you will certainly make a Widow of the third. I relate this Discourse of *Montauban's*, that the Reader may observe, that we have sometimes a Foreboding of those Misfortunes that are to happen to us.

We met not long after with two *English* Ships, one of four and twenty, the other of six and thirty Guns. It was Rashness, or rather Madness, to pretend to attack them. Nevertheless an Attack was unanimously resolved upon, nothing seeming to us able to resist the Experience and Courage of our Chief ; who on his Side forgetting the reasonable

F 5

things

things he had told us, was the Person who testified the most Impatience to come to Action. The *English* saw us bear up to them without any Concern, and made us find that they knew very well how to deal with the Privateers. We perceived it by their Working, and the Care they took to make it almost impossible to board them, by putting out a Boom*, with which they were provided. Added to this, that their Ships understood each other as well as if the same Captain had commanded them: When we made our Efforts to board one, the other gave us a Volley of all her Artillery. Their Fire-Arms harrafs'd us extremely, and were so superior to ours, that they had three hundred Musket-shot against our fifty.

Our Chief seeing plainly then that we had acted like Fools in engaging ourselves in this Combat, redoubled his
Courage.

* These are long Pieces of Wood, as Ends of Masts for Example, laid across upon the Decks of Ships, which advancing considerably out on each Side, prevent any other Vessel from approaching them.

Courage to surmount all those Obstacles which prevented our Victory. He foam'd with Rage, and finding he was come at last to his third Wife, he would have let us all perish, if happily for us he had not been killed with a Cannon Bullet, after a desperate Fight of half an Hour. I was immediately chose Captain, not to continue an Engagement so disagreeable to us, but to save the rest of our People, who were reduced to fifty Men, most of them being wounded and unable to defend themselves.

In this Manner the Dignity of Captain was conferred upon me for the first Time, with express Conditions that my first Order should be to make a Retreat; and that my Authority should extend no farther than to reconduct to *Petit Goave* our shattered Vessel, with five and twenty maimed, and the same Number of Men who had escaped, or were only slightly wounded.

When the Captain of a Privateer has been killed, the Vessel is put into Mourning in the following Manner: The Flag
and

and Pendant are brought half way down the Mast, and by that means drag along the Sea ; the Vessel is stripp'd of her Streamers, and her Colours ; the Working her along is performed in deep Silence and very slowly, and every half Hour a Cannon is let off. This informed Monsieur *de Choiseuil* of the Death of the unfortunate *Montauban*, before we arrived in the Port. The Governor, I must do him that Justice, wept excessively for the Loss of that brave Man : He could not forgive himself, for having drawn him from his Solitude to make this unhappy Campaign. He was touched also with our Misfortunes.

I think I ought not here to forget to speak of a Custom established amongst the Privateers. When they have lost their Captain in a Fight, they sell the Vessel, and all it contains, even to the Arms, for the Subsistence and Cure of the Wounded, and to pay what is assigned to every one for his Wounds. This is the Regulation upon that Head : Two thousand *Livres* are given to a Privateer

vateer for the Loss of an Arm, a Leg, an Eye, an Ear, a Nose, a Thumb, or even a little Finger ; in short, for any Member ; and if any one remains disabled by his Wounds, he has a Right to be received on board the first Privateer's Vessel that appears ; where, though he is of no Use, he has an equal Share with the rest.

The End of the FIRST BOOK.



THE

The first of these is the fact that the
 Government has been unable to secure
 the necessary funds to carry out its
 policy of non-interference in the
 internal affairs of the country. This
 has been due to a variety of reasons,
 including the fact that the Government
 has been unable to secure the necessary
 funds to carry out its policy of non-
 interference in the internal affairs of
 the country. This has been due to a
 variety of reasons, including the fact
 that the Government has been unable
 to secure the necessary funds to carry
 out its policy of non-interference in
 the internal affairs of the country.

STATE OF NEW YORK

1944-1945

1997

1981

425

... ..



THE
ADVENTURES
OF THE
Chevalier de Beauchene.

B O O K II.

The Chevalier de Beauchene refuses to accept of the Post of Captain. He goes again to Sea with seventy-five Privateers. They meet with four English Vessels, who use them very roughly. The Chevalier goes to St. Domingo, to join some French Privateers there. The gallant Adventure of a Rocheller, one of his Companions. They go to cruize upon the Coast of the Carraccas, and with a Vessel of eight Guns,

Guns, take two English Ships, one of four and twenty, and the other of six and thirty Guns. They return to St. Domingo, where they share their Prizes, and fall into all manner of Debauchery. They put to Sea again. The History of a Philosophical Privateer. They attack a Ship of six and forty Guns and three hundred Men, and take it after a hot Resistance. But they have no sooner gained that Prize than she is taken from them by an English Man of War, of fifty Guns, and a Frigate of six and thirty, who make them Prisoners. They are first sent to Jamaica, and from thence to the Prisons of King'sale in Ireland. A Detail of the Miseries they are made to suffer. They all die except the Chevalier, who finds means to escape. He goes to Cork, where he has the Happiness to find a Widow, who out of Generosity does him Service, and who engages an English Captain to set him a-shore in Hispaniola, from whence he goes to Petit Goave. There Monsieur de Choiseuil gives him a Vessel and ninety Men, with which he has the Boldness to go
and

and cruize in Sight of the Ports of Jamaica, to revenge himself upon the first English he can take, for the Cruelties exercised in Ireland upon himself and his Companions. He takes an English Ship, and treats the Crew most barbarously. He has a Dispute with the Governor and Citizens of the Town of Canary. He attacks another English Ship, in which he finds two French Prisoners, one of whom is his Acquaintance.



MONSIEUR *de Choiseuil*, after having testified his Regret for *Montauban*, offered us another Vessel, named the *St. Rose*, which had been taken from the *Spaniards* by the *Dutch*, and lately retaken from them by the *French*. We accepted the Offer; but the Company was to be formed, which took up between two and three Months. At the Expiration of that Time we found ourselves seventy-five brave Fellows, and we immediately set sail.

They

They all exhorted me to keep the Place of Captain, which had been given me after the Death of *Montauban*. I refused it, not finding that I had Experience enough to acquit myself well of such a Post, and upon my Refusal they chose a *Canadian* of *Quebec*, called *Minet*, a good Seaman, and equally prudent and courageous.

When we were over-against the East Part of the Island of *Cuba*, of which we had begun to discover the Coasts, we perceived a Brigantine of fourteen Guns ; tho' the Sea was rough we gave him Chace a considerable Time. If it was dangerous for them not to draw in their Sails, it was no less so to wait for us, therefore they crowded all the Sail they could, yet notwithstanding we drew nearer them, and were almost within Cannon-shot of them, when a most dreadful Gust of Wind overset them before our Eyes. All their Company perished excepting three Persons, who chose rather to fall into our Hands than into those of Death.

We

We were so provoked to see our Prey thus ravished from us, that we set forth our Fate with all the Energy of Privateers, and in the most expressive Terms; I believe, in our Ill-humour, we should have suffered these three Wretches to sink without condescending to succour them, if we had not had a Curiosity to know the Value of what we had lost. We saved them then with that Intention, and it may be guessed how great was our Despair, when they told us that their Captain was the famous *Charles Gandi*, a Mulattoe of *Jamaica*, who had been trading upon the Coasts of the *Carraccas*, and was returning with a hundred thousand Piaſtres, upon the Account of a rich Merchant. The Loss of this brave Captain was of more Consequence to the *English* than that of the Money, tho' the Sum was so large.

After this, we passed three or four Months without meeting any thing but a large Fishing Bark, which we took; we asked the Master for News of *Paneston*, a Town in *Jamaica*. He told us he knew none, tho' he made several Voyages

Voyages there in a Year ; He was a Man between forty and fifty, who, with three of his Sons, and two Servants, carried dry'd Fish thither. We were tired of waiting so long in vain, for an Opportunity of taking some good Prize, and it came into our Captain's Thoughts to make use of these People, to know if there was any thing to be done ; he detained the three Sons of the Fisherman, and giving him six of our stoutest Boys, he obliged him to go to *Paneston*, assuring him that the Life of his Children depended upon his Behaviour ; that he need only load himself with dried Fish, enter into the Port as usual, and inform himself privately whether any Vessel was going out, or whether any was expected in very soon. You need only, added *Minet*, execute punctually what I have told you, and when you come to give me an Account of your Commission I will deliver up your Sons. But take Care what you do ; if you attempt the least Treason, we will hang them before your Eyes at our Yard-Arm.

The Fisherman proved a good Father, he performed what was required of him
to

to Perfection ; but indeed, besides the Menace that was made him, two of our Boys, armed with Poniards and Pistols, had secret Orders to observe him closely, and kill him, if he made the least suspicious Step. They brought us Word, that five *English* Ships, the largest of five and twenty Guns, and the others of half as many, were preparing to set sail for *New-England*, and that they would leave the Port speedily ; we waited for them in effect only eight Days ; on the ninth we perceived them, and we remarked there was one who was a slow Sailor, and very distant from the others.

Our Captain immediately proposed to us to attack that, saying, that when we had made ourselves Masters of it, we might make use of it against the other four that accompanied it : This was the most prudent Method, but we would not follow it ; we feared lest the four Vessels that were together should escape, whilst we pursued that which was alone ; besides, the first was nearest to us, and our Hands itched to come to Blows. The Captain in vain remonstrated to us, that that Ardour of Fighting,

ing, which generally is unaccompanied with Discretion amongst the Privateers, hinders them from weighing all Circumstances, and generally draws upon them all the Misfortunes they meet with. In a word, it was to no purpose for him to speak Reason to us, nobody was of his Opinion. At length, when he saw that we all required that he should conduct us to the four Vessels,—Gentlemen, said he to us, I will lead you on immediately, tho' it is pursuing your Courage more than your Prudence. You burn with Impatience to come to Action; you will see one from which I can't promise to bring you off with Safety.

Tho' the *English* were sensible that we designed to attack them, they continued their Route as calmly as if they had not perceived us; they did not seem to think of us, and yet they were taking proper Measures to make us repent of our Temerity. They knew that, according to our usual Custom, we should immediately attempt to board them; they prepared themselves for it, and when we were within Cannon-shot, their largest Frigate presented herself; we
imme-

immediately grappled with her, and leaped hastily upon her Deck, which was exactly what they desired; and we found their Company so strongly retrenched between their Decks, that it was impossible for us to force them.

Besides this, they had taken the Precaution to saw off the Bar of the Helm, so that not being able to steer the Ship, we remained there above half an Hour, exposed to all their Musket-shot, some of us employed in endeavouring to break open with Hatchets the Retrenchments they had made, and others busied in returning, by a very inferior Fire, that which was made upon us from the three other Vessels, which passing continually by us, gave us Broadfides loaded with broken Bullets and old Iron, which killed us as many Men as they could have wished. We were constrained to return on board our own Vessel again, to cut our Grappling-Irons, and to retire; we were in so bad a Condition, that there were not fifteen of us capable of working the Ship. The Privateers are People so dreadful to the Merchant-Ships, that as much disabled as we were, yet we kept
our

our Enemies in Awe ; they seemed still to fear lest we should have a Mind to return to the Attack, and returned Thanks to Heaven to find themselves free from us ; tho' if they had pursued us, and but one of their Ships had harrassed us for a quarter of an Hour, we must have been obliged to yield at Discretion.

- This second Disgrace brought us so low, that Monsieur *de Choiseuil* lost all Hopes of ever recovering it. The Vessel was again sold for the Benefit of the Wounded, in which Number I had the good Fortune not to be included. Our continued Misfortunes gave no Person any Desire to associate with us, and we were forced to remain idle, and wait till some Ship of the Privateers came to anchor at *Petit Goave*. This was a melancholy Incident to a Man so impatient as I was ; I was, nevertheless, resolved to do as well as my Companions, when several *French* Privateers, who were at *St. Domingo*, wrote to me, that if I was willing to come to them, they would procure me a Vessel that carried eight Guns, of which the Governor of the

the

the Place, an affable and a generous *Spaniard*, had promised to make them a Present, when he found they were a sufficient Number to put to Sea. I could not have received a more agreeable Piece of News; I imparted it to my Comrades, but there were but four who would follow me, tho' there were eighteen or twenty capable of the Service.

The Reasons they gave to the contrary were, that all the *French* who had trusted in this manner to the *Spaniards*, had sooner or later always repented it. We made a Jest of their Distrust, and they of our Security; we preached to one another, and our Discourses were as fruitless as the Sermons that are preached at Court against Flattery and Dissimulation. I took my Party then, the four Privateers who were in the same Disposition with myself, and we all five prepared for our Departure across the Country.

The Evening before our Departure we informed our Host of it, that he might instruct us in the Route we should
Vol. I. G take,

take, and that at the same Time he might take our Notes for what we owed him; for in that Place every Privateer has Credit in those Times: They lent him freely whatever he desired, and those Debts were paid preferably to every thing else upon the first Prize that was made, even if the Debtor happened to be kill'd. A young Boarder in our *Auberge* asked us in the Evening, if it would be agreeable to us for him to join Company with us, together with a Friend of his, who was just arrived from a large and rich Habitation, which his Parents had at some Leagues Distance from thence. We both design, added he, to repair to the *Spanish-Town*, and, to perform this Journey without any Hazard, we address ourselves to such brave Men as you are, and desire you to suffer us to be in your Company.

Besides that, he captivated our Favour by his Compliment, he offered to defray our Charges upon the Route, and even to take Guides at his own Charge and Expence. This was a certain Method of obtaining our Consent, and we could not refuse it him. As he hinted
to

to us that he and his Friend wished to depart privately, and that we ourselves had the same Intention, to elude the Instances that Monsieur *de Choiseuil* might have made to detain us, we agreed with the young Man, that we would depart the Night following, after Supper.

Our Host told us in private, that he did not know his Boarder, but that his Friend was a *Creolian*, the Son of a rich Family, and had been brought up at *Paris*, from whence he had not been returned above two Months; that he was upon the Point of marrying a young Lady with a very great Fortune, and that yet this young Man seemed to express more Aversion than Love for her. We saw the *Creolian* arrive the next Day; he was mounted upon a good Horse, and had behind him a large Valise, full of all the Money and Jewels he could carry off from his Friends; he had some Trouble to provide another Horse for his Friend, which retarded our Departure till Midnight.

We were scarce out of the *Auberge* before we found ourselves in a new Embarras: The Boarder, the *Creolian's* Friend, was a very indifferent Horseman; he stagger'd upon his Saddle every Step he went, in such a manner that one of us was obliged to mount upon his Horse behind and hold him: This, joined to his soft and effeminate Look, made us from that Time suspect what we discovered some few Days after. Not to kill his Horse, which was not a very strong one, we chose out the lightest young Fellow amongst us to do this agreeable Service, which carried its Recompence along with it. This was a little, thin, alert *Rocheller*, whom we had named * *Touten Muscles*, from his being very strong, tho' he was not five Feet high. He had a cunning artful Mind; he penetrated the Mystery from the first, and, without making us Partners in his Discovery, he endeavoured to make use of it. The Heat obliged us to travel more in the Night than in the Day; this favoured the Enterprize of our Comrade; the Rogue was disappearing every now and then, as if he
had

* *All Muscles.*

had lost his Way, and found us again in a quarter of an Hour. These little Absences were remarked, and the Friend of the *Creolian* imagined to be a Woman in Disguise. But we had no longer any room to doubt it, when one Morning we found that she had departed over Night with the *Rockeller*, the two Horses, and the Valise, which she took care to inform us of by a Billet that she left for her Lover, and which contained these Words :

“ I have reflected, Monsieur, that,
“ being a Minor, you could not with
“ Conscience marry me contrary to the
“ Inclination of your Parents. I sup-
“ pose also, you are tired of travel-
“ ling with me by this Time, there-
“ fore to do you a Pleasure I take an-
“ other Guide. I ought to do this if
“ it were only to restore you to your
“ Family, who are now lamenting
“ your Loss, and to the Person who is
“ destined for your Bride. Adieu,
“ Monsieur, never think of looking
“ after me, I have lost my Way now
“ in earnest.”

This Billet occasioned great Laughter. Some said, that this fair *Anti-Lucretia* had found out, that Monsieur *ToutenMuscles* was more suitable for her Purpose than the *Creolian*. It was the *Rockeller* doubtless, said another, that exacted this Letter from her, that she might have all the Honour of the Action, making a Scruple of taking to his own Account this generous Care of obliging a Family he was unacquainted with. In fine, every one had something to say upon the Occasion. However, our Laughter soon gave Place to Sentiments of Compassion, which we could not avoid discovering.

The young Man to whom this Billet was addressed, as soon as he read it, became motionless with Astonishment; then all of a sudden, rousing from that Situation into Fury, he burst out into a Fit of Despair, that touched us; he would have killed himself with his own Hands, if we had not prevented him; he told us afterwards, that he was resolved to follow us on Foot, that he might rejoin this unfaithful Wretch, and load her with Reproaches. After that,
yield-

yielding to the Foible he had for this Creature, he melted into Tears, and sobbed with such excessive Violence, that tho' we were Privateers, yet he moved us to Compassion.

This Tragi-comic Scene passed in a Habitation where we had stopped. We employed a whole Day there in consoling him, and in exhorting him to return to his Parents. By degrees we soften'd his Grief, and he yielded insensibly to the Force of our Reasons: We asked him in what Part of the World he had got Acquaintance with this ungrateful Woman, who did not deserve his Tears. To satisfy our Curiosity he told us, not without many Sighs, that she was of *Paris*; that he had loved the perfidious Wretch from the first Moment he had seen her there, where she was kept by a *Maltotier* *; that he had attach'd himself to her, and that, after having spent immense Sums, to allure her from her Man of Business, he had succeeded in it. It cost me as much, said he, to determine her to follow me into this Country; and, to finish my History, I was

G 4

now

* A Farmer of the Taxes.

now going with this Inconstant to the *Spanish Town*, only that I might marry her, in spite of my Parents, who destine me for another Person.

When we saw the *Creolian* begin to be disposed to return home, we joined all the Money we four had amongst us, to what he had left in his Pocket, in order to hire two Guides, one to conduct him by small Days Journeys, and the other to go before, and advertise his Family to send a Horse to meet him. In doing this generous Action, we never considered, that it was cutting off our own Heads to save another Man's; as in effect, for want of Money, we were obliged to feed like the antient Hermits, upon the Fruits of the Desert for the rest of our Journey.

As we drew near *St. Domingo* we saw several of the *French* Privateers, who came to meet us, and who appeared very well pleased at our Arrival. The *Rocheller* was amongst them; as soon as he could speak to us in private, he confessed to us all that we knew before, without informing us what was become
of

of his *Parisian* Nymph, desiring us to keep the Secret, which we did, tho' he did not deserve it. He had indeed Reason to fear his Adventure's being known; they might have easily forgiven him the Rape of this *Helen*; but the Valise carried off had an Air of Robbery, that would have been prejudicial to his Reputation.

The Governor of *St. Domingo*, who expected us with Impatience, honoured us with a very gracious Reception, and me in particular; he gave me twenty brave *Spaniards* to command, together with sixty *French* Men, whom he had assembled. To return the Esteem that he testified for me, I used so much Diligence that I made ready and set Sail in less than a Fortnight. I return now to our *Rocheller*: I was very much surprized to see his *Parisian* on board with him, whom he made to pass for a young Brother of his, that he was willing, he said, should learn his Trade betimes.

The poor Privateer was taken in as well as the *Creolian*; he became distract-

edly in Love with this Creature, whom he was teaching the whole Day to fence and use a Musket, tho' we all advised him in private to leave her in Quality of Surgeon's Boy or Apprentice. This Advice was not to his Taste, for he was so monstrously jealous of her, that he would have her always in his Sight ; he suffered miserably when he saw her speak to any body, and especially to those who, like us, were in his Confidence in spite of himself ; his Jealousy made him pass many uneasy Moments. One Day whilst he was at Play, having perceived that his young Brother was gone out of Sight, he could not conceal his Disorder, and from that Time, tho' it was his darling Pleasure, he never gamed again ; but indeed there happened to us, in about a Week afterwards, an Adventure which cured him radically of the Passion he had for Play, as well as of his Jealousy.

In cruizing upon the Coasts of the *Saraccas* we met with a Vessel of four and twenty Guns, which we looked upon immediately as a Treasure that was our own, as it could not possibly escape
for

for the Calm that then reign'd upon the Sea. We soon joined it by the Assistance of our Oars, and having grappled with it, we obliged them to strike in less than a quarter of an Hour, with the Loss of six only of our Men, in which Number was the unfortunate *Touten Muscles*, by his own Fault. At the Boarding he leaped with us upon the Deck of the *English* Ship ; his Mistress, hurried along by the Crowd, found herself obliged to do the same, and not being used to such an Escalade, she dropped into the Sea. The Lover seeing her drowning, was hastening to her Assistance, but one of our Men stopped him, threatening to shoot him through the Head if he drew back * ; the *Rocheller*, drove on by the Excess of his Passion, despised the Menace, and received that Instant a Musket-shot in his Head. Thus perished this unhappy Wretch, for having abandoned himself to a Passion that is Folly in all Men, but Madness in a Privateer.

We

* In an Action the least Boy has a Right to shoot any Privateer that draws back one Step.

We were very well satisfied with our Enterprize; I put twenty of my People on board the *English* Vessel, and the greatest Part of the Prisoners into the Hold of my own. We were conveying our Capture as in Triumph, when we discovered another Vessel, which making its Advantage of a small Gale of Wind which then arose, bore down upon us with crowded Sails. Our Prisoners had told us that they were in Company with another Ship of six and thirty Guns, which they had been separated from about two Days before by hazy Weather. I did not doubt but this Vessel was that which they had spoke of; and what agreed with my Conjecture was, that it seemed to me as if this Vessel strove to rejoin the other. I immediately made them bring too all the Sails, because their Figure, which was particular, would soon have made us known. I set up also an *English* Flag, and lest our Prisoners should revolt during the Combat, we laid them all in Irons. Besides all this, I made my Route slowly towards *Jamaica*, and the *English*, deceived by these Appearances,

ances, came within Cannon-shot without finding out their Mistake.

Then spreading at once all our Sails, and hoisting the Colours of *France* upon both our Vessels, we came so hastily upon theirs, that we grappled with them, and boarded them before they knew whom they had to deal with; but in return, as soon as they perceived it, they made incredible Efforts to repulse us. They were strong in Men, by consequence they made a dreadful Slaughter amongst us. Nay, they would perhaps have made us retire in spite of all our Courage, if our Companions, who were upon the Prize Vessel, had not also thrown out their Grappling-Irons, and leaped upon the Quarter-Deck, after having given them three or four Broad-sides with their Cannon. The *English*, attacked on both Sides, could not hold out much longer, and were obliged to yield, tho' they were still above three to one.

We had however, upon this Occasion, about five and twenty Men killed and wounded. When we arrived at
St.

St. Domingo, we went to give an Account of our Campaign to the Governor, who was extremely surprized to hear what we had done. He could not conceive how fifty Men could be capable of taking two hundred, and of carrying off, with a Vessel of eight Guns, one of four and twenty, and another of thirty-six. As to the Profit which arose to us from these two Prizes, it was so considerable, that, exclusive of what was of a Nature to be divided amongst us, as is customary, I remember that the Admiralty, for their Dues upon the rest, had near fifty thousand Crowns.

It will be imagined, doubtless, that after two such lucky Hits, fifty Privateers will be turned into fifty creditable Citizens, and live easy and happy for the rest of their Days. Excuse me, these are not their Maxims: We passed six or seven Months in *St. Domingo*, doing what fifty young *Musquetaires* would do amongst the Citizens of a Town surrendered at Discretion. Gaming, Balls, Treats, Quarrels, Riots, these were our whole Business. When a *Spaniard* pretended to take it ill that we gave a Serenade to
his

his Wife, and had not the Civility to open the Door to us, we went in at the Windows. There was every Day some Father, or some Husband, bringing his Complaints to the Governor. On the other Side, those who had neither Wives nor handsome Daughters, and who found their Account in our Dissipations, interested themselves for us, and spoke in our Favour; they did not trouble themselves about what Ravages we made in the Night, provided that they could sell us in the Day, for a Piaſtre, what was not worth a Shilling.

Our Liberties, however, were carried so far, that the Governor, after having in vain desired us to be more reasonable, found himself obliged to forbid our bearing Arms within the Town; neither would he have gone so far, but for an Insult committed by a Privateer upon one of his domestick Officers, who had a Nose of an excessive Length. Thy Nose shocks me, said the Privateer to him as he met him in the Street, I am resolved to pare off the Superfluities of it with my Cutlass. Allons, my Friend, draw your Sword. The Officer, who
was

was a *Spaniard*, defended his Nose like a Man of Courage; but not being willing to be reduced to preserving it again in the same Manner, he complained of it to his Master, who caused an Order to be published, by which the Privateers were forbid bearing any Weapons in *St. Domingo*.

We obey'd, and appeared several times before the Governor unarm'd, and, like a good forgiving Master, he thanked us at first for the Respect we had for his Orders; but when he heard that we had our Swords carried after us by our Men, as the *Canadians* of *Monfieur de Ibergville's* Company had done in the same Case at *Rockelle*, he was irritated extremely at us. He again commanded that no Privateer should bear Arms within the Town; and added, that if any one caused them to be carried after him, he should be punished for it by an Imprisonment of six Months; so that he put it out of our Power to fight in the Town, unless it was at Boxing.

This just Severity of the Governor produced two different Effects; the Citizens

zens began not to fear us so much, and the Women to love us more : Our Vessel became the Scene of gallant Feasts ; and those Women whom we could not see before but by taking their Apartments by Assault, in their Turn, now leaped out of the Windows to us, rather than they would be wanting in the Ceremonial of Politeness, and not repay our Visits. As for the *Spaniards*, being irritated that, without being desired, we introduced the *French* Liberty and Politeness with so much Success amongst their Wives, they disembarassed themselves in the *Spanish* Manner of all those among us that fell into their Hands in the Night. We lost in this genteel Manner four or five of our most gallant Privateers, and those who were reckoned the *Petit Maitres* of our Troop.

As we knew the Intrigues that had been so fatal to them, we resolved to revenge their Deaths. We could not do this in the Town without an open Rebellion, and we were too small a Number to dare to rebel. We judged therefore, that we must endeavour to draw a-board those whom we suspected
of

of having assassinated our Companions. The better to deceive these Assassins, we ceased to complain of the Misfortune of our Brethren, and affected to appear satisfied. We even said openly, that those among us who made a Disorder in the Town, contrary to the Order of the Governor, made themselves deserving of any Accident that happened to them. Upon these Discourses the Citizens thought us more fearful and less terrible than we were. They imagined, that finding ourselves reduced to the Number of five and thirty *French*, we thought it more proper to speak smoothly than to rhodomontade. They were in another Error also: They thought the *Spanish* Privateers had no good Understanding with us; and yet they were the Men who delivered up to us four of the Husbands whom we looked upon Privateericides; and this was the Stratagem which they made use of to bring them to us a-board an *English* Vessel that we had taken; they proposed to them to conduct them thither towards Night, telling them that we should sell them very cheap a considerable Parcel of Jewels, which we designed

signed to dispose of secretly in order to defraud the Admiralty.

These honest Gentlemen, who desired no better than to join with us in this clandestine Commerce, gave easily into the Snare ; and when we had them in our Power, we put on a magisterial Air, and interrogated them in Form upon the Murders committed in their Quarters, and which were imputed to them. It was in vain that they protested their Innocence ; they had to do with Judges who would condemn them before they were heard. We had nothing to debate upon but the Punishment that we should make them suffer, when perceiving amongst them a little obstinate Man who had a very handsome Wife, whom he had hitherto rendered always inaccessible to us : Messieurs, said I to my Companions, if these other three *Padrones* have Wives as pretty as this has, I am of Opinion that we should give them their Lives, provided they send for them to us immediately ; and I propose that they should meditate upon their Sins in the
Bottom

Bottom of the Hold, whilst we sup with their Ladies.

So pleasant an Idea of Vengeance made the whole Company laugh, and saved the *Spaniards*, who but for this would infallibly have gone. We gave over then all Thoughts of Bloodshed. We reasoned only upon the Sentence that I had pronounced, and every one having voted, it was resolved, that to avoid Inconveniencies we would go ourselves, provided with good Procurations under the Hands of the Husbands, and sup with their Wives in private to avoid all Scandal. We took an ill-natured Pleasure in seeing the different Grimaces that these four poor Wretches made when they signed their Procurations. Those who were the most jealous, rejoiced us by the mortal Fears that were painted upon their Countenances. All this however was no more than a Jest: We went to Supper at our Inns, bounding our Vengeance only by detaining the Husbands all Night in the Ship, and making them imagine that their Procurations had not been useless. We had made Acquaintance with so many other Ladies,

Ladies, that it is no wonder we had not the Curiosity to go after these; who, when they saw their Husbands again, whom we took care to send them the next Day, I believe, had no little Trouble to persuade them that they had received no Damage but this Fright.

Whilst we lead this delightful Life at *St. Domingo*, spending our Treasure with as much Haste as we had gained it, there arrived from *Petit Goave* a Reinforcement of twelve *French* Privateers, who forced us from the Arms of Sloth and Voluptuousness. We abandoned our Pleasure abruptly to make ready for the Sea, and we set sail with as much Ardour as if we were certain that we were departing only to return with new Conquests. Iniquity and Vice stupify the Mind. We did not consider, that having spent so much Time in Debauchery, we were now perhaps running eagerly to meet those Chastisements that Divine Justice had prepared for us.

Amongst the Privateers who came to us from *Petit Goave*, there was one of a Character very new in that Profession.

feſſion. He was a perfect Philoſopher, a meditating *Malebranchiſt*, who had never ſeen a drawn Sword, and knew nothing of Gunpowder but by the Experiments he had made upon the Elatiſcity of the Air that it contained. What will appear moſt ſingular is, that we were wonderfully pleaſed with him, tho' he could neither fight, nor game, nor ſwear, nor drink. We all liſtened to him with Pleaſure, eſpecially when he talked Phyſicks, and explained to us the Cauſe of Eclipſes, of the Winds, of the Flux and Reflux of the Sea, and of all the ſurprizing Phœnomena of Nature; which he did, confining himſelf as much as poſſible to common plain Expreſſions, ſuitable to the Capacity of his Audience.

His Converſation delighted us. I ſhall never forget the Diſcourſe he made the firſt time he related to us by what Chance he was thrown among us. He could not think of it without making Exclamations that diverted us. I ſeem to have been born, ſaid he to us, to ſhew the World the Caprices of Fate. After having been from my Infancy till
this

this Time, as it were buried in the Study of Philosophy, behold me now reduced to wander on the Sea, not as a curious Naturalist, but in the Quality of a Privateer : What a strange Metamorphosis ! Neither is this any more than the common Caprice of my Stars, which I cannot myself comprehend how I could give way to. He stopp'd here, and seemed unwilling to proceed any farther. We desired him to explain himself more clearly, and our Intreaties were the more earnest, as the Privateers who had brought him from *Petit Goave*, and who knew his History, laughed immoderately at his Silence ; which made us imagine that what he concealed deserved our Attention. Our Prayers were not in vain, he began his Speech again in these Terms :

You see, Gentlemen, that I don't willingly run on in superfluous Discourse, and that I am possess'd of the Gift of Taciturnity. But you do not know me yet. 'Tis pity that you cannot contrive a Closet here, at a distance from the Noise and continual Movement there is in your Vessel, you would see

see me shut myself up there for five or six Days together, without coming out of it; nay, without so much as speaking a Word to those who brought me my Provisions. Such is my Taste, in this Manner I have always lived, and at the same time have always been reckoned the most unsociable of Mortals, a Hater of Mankind, and still more of Womankind. Yet, Gentlemen, can you believe it, I have banished myself into this new World, only to avoid one whom I married in one of those unfortunate Moments when the Philosopher yielding basely to the Animal, notwithstanding his Philosophy, let himself be captivated under the Yoke of Hymen.

In a City of *France*, not very distant from *Paris*, I took to Wife a young Person extremely amiable, but at the same time extremely gay. I was not four Days before I perceived that I had played the Fool, and that I had embraced a Condition very unsuitable to me. My Wife, through an Excess of Affidity and Complaisance, became my Tormentor. She followed me without ceasing, loaded me with Caresses, and did not leave
me

me to myself a Moment. Was I reading in my Closet, she would come in search of me Singing and Dancing ; tear the Book out of my Hands, and tell me with a Laugh that she was worth all the Volumes in my Library ; so that to read at liberty, I was obliged to go out of the Town, and to retire to a Friend. In fine, she loved Society as much as I did Study and Retirement. From the Moment it was Day with *Madam*, the House was an Assembly till it was Night. It might have been bearable however, if not pretending to take it ill that my Wife lived in this Manner, I had on my Side had the liberty to live after my own Fancy ; but No, she resolved that I should follow her's ; she would reform me, she said, polish me, and above all hinder my Reading from doing me harm. How you are altered ! sometimes she would cry out ; 'tis this Reading that destroys you ; I must burn all these odious Books that ruin you entirely.

It was in vain for me to be enraged at myself, and curse my Marriage, my giddy Spouse obliged me out of Compliance

H

plaisance to do every thing that she liked. However, after some Months she ceased to torment me, and despairing of being able to alter a hardened Philosopher, she let me read as much as I pleased, without disturbing herself any further to make me alter my Conduct, and without ever thinking to reform her own. On the contrary, she redoubled her Expences, and made so prodigious a Diminution of my Fortune in Treats, Dress, Furniture, and publick Places, that in less than two Years she ruined me entirely. I had no other Resource but a Plantation, which my Father had left at his Death, and which was inhabited by a Man who had some Share in it, and who always deferring to make up his Accounts with me, had not yet sent me any Remittances to *Europe*.

When I perceived then, about five or six Months since, that I had not enough left to pay a Quarter of what my Wife owed to the Baker, the Butcher, the Cook, the Laundress, &c. I departed quietly without bidding her Adieu, to spare myself the Trouble of hearing the Musick she would have made

made upon that Occasion ; I embarked for *St. Domingo*, in hopes that I should live there easily and happily, since I should be at a Distance from my Wife. But upon my Arrival, I found that the Plantation upon which I depended had been sold, and that the Villain of a Seller was no longer in the Country. This News struck me so excessively, that I was very near repenting that I had left my Wife. This is expressing it sufficiently. Nothing was then talked of at *Petit Goave*, but the immense Riches that the *French* had gained who were at the *Spanish* Town. I lodged with several of these Gentlemen who are listening to me, I had related my Misfortunes to them ; they pitied me, and seeing I did not know what to turn myself to, they proposed to me to follow them. I accepted the Proposition ; and I should applaud myself for it, if I did not fear that I shall appear a Brother unworthy of you. For, in fine, I have no very warlike Heart ; I am sensible of it. I cannot hear a Fuzil shot off without trembling.

This new Privateer if we may give him that Name, because he was amongst us, here finished his History. I endeavoured to give him Courage, and told him that he would be much sooner used to the Ways of the Privateers, than he had been to those of his Wife; and that when he had been two or three Times at the Stern of a large Ship, exposed to the Whizzing of Cannon Bullets out of their Chace Guns, he would not be afraid of a Musket-shot: However, I added, that if he chose it he might keep in the Steerage at first, and see us fight without entering into the Party, till he was used to Musquetades and Cannon-shot.

We were much more impatient than he was to meet some Vessel which might give us an Opportunity of shewing him in what Manner we designed to inure him to stand Fire. This did not happen however till near two Months after. One Morning, as we doubled the little Island of *Tortoises*, there presented itself before us an *English* Vessel, to which we made up without Hesitation. The Captain who commanded it would have
thought

thought himself dishonoured by endeavouring to avoid us. In effect, he saw only a small Vessel of eight Guns, which he did not think would be rash enough to attack one of six and forty Cannon and three hundred Men. He did not know the Privateers. The Master and his Mate who knew what kind of People we were, had a very hot Dispute with him upon this Occasion, as they told us themselves after the Action. The Master remarking that we drew still nearer to them, advised him to prepare for an Engagement. Don't trouble yourself about it, replied the Captain, can you be afraid of a Sloop that I could hoist up whole upon the Deck? It may be a Sloop if you please, replied the Master something affronted; but this Sloop contains perhaps a hundred Men, whom you will see leap upon your Deck to spare you the Trouble of hoisting them there; and if you don't take care, they may throw you and all your Crew overboard, as numerous as you are.

After a long Debate, the wise Prudence of the Master got the better of the too great Confidence of the Captain.

They prepared themselves a good Retrenchment; after which they were so complaisant as to wait for us, fully resolved to prevent us from boarding them, or at least to make all the Efforts they were capable of; the Sea was very rough, and the first Broadfides of their Cannon did us no other Harm than frightening the Philosopher; but soon after we were almost entirely stripped of our Sails and Tackling; so that if we had not seized the Opportunity that a Gust of Wind gave us, of fastening our Grappling-Irons upon their Stern, we should have been utterly disabled. Their Cannon then became all useless to them, except their two Chace-Guns, and even those they could make no great Use of, as we fired incessantly into their Portholes. We mounted at length upon their Deck, not without much Difficulty, because of the rolling of the Waves, and through so dreadful a Fire of Musquetry, that I lost at least a third of my People; we did not begin to breathe again till we came to Action with our Sabres.

During

During the Time that we fought, they with their Swords and Spontons, and we with our Cutlasses, Chance brought the Captain and me, without knowing each other, to combat together. We fixed upon each other ; I frankly confess that I never met with so staunch a Gamester. Fatigued with his parrying all my Strokes, I began to faint, and gave him those that were less severe, and I found that I was sinking under his, when in a Moment he had his Thigh broke with a Pistol-shot. Not being able to support himself, he measured the Earth, or rather the Deck, with his Body, and his Fall the instant after was followed by mine ; so much was I weaken'd by the Gun-shots I had received, and by the Blood that I had lost. In the mean time my Comrades pressed the *English* so closely, that they obliged them to retire between their Decks, where loading them with Granades and Powder-Horns, they constrained them to strike their Flag.

I was under the Hands of the Surgeon, who seeing me in a deep Swoon, employed all his Art to bring me to

myself again; and when he had succeeded in it, I asked him, if we were conquered, or Conquerors. He informed me, with a Joy that the Idea of a great Fortune inspired him with, that the *English* Vessel was our own; that she was returning from *Angola*; that her Ballast was Elephants Teeth or Ivory, and her Cargo five hundred and fifty Negroes, and a considerable Quantity of Gold Dust. We could not certainly have taken a richer Prize; my Comrades applauded their happy Fate, expressing their Raptures in the loudest Transports of Joy. But, alas! their Happiness was of short Duration: They had not Time so much as to take an Account of their Treasure. Fortune deprived them of it very abruptly; it was theirs only from Eight in the Morning till Eleven, and they paid dearly for that short Enjoyment.

In endeavouring to make the *Quay de St. Louis*, which was the nearest *French* Port to the Place where we were, we run directly in the Way of the *Fer-sey*, an *English* Man of War of fifty Guns, that was stationed upon the Coast.

This

This Vessel was cruizing upon the Coast of *Hispaniola*, with a Frigate of thirty-six Guns. Our Vessel was so shatter'd, that we had not so much as a Thought of endeavouring to escape them, and yet in our Despair we prepared to defend ourselves. I made myself be carried upon the Deck, where not being able to stand, nor even to sit upright, they laid me in such a manner, that having my Arms at Liberty, and my Head a little raised, I could still shoot off a Fuzil. The fifteen Men who conducted our Prize were at first tempted to set fire to the Powder and blow up the Ship; but remarking that we prepared for an Engagement, they did the same. I had only five and twenty Men left with me, including the Philosopher and the Wounded.

The *Jersey* first made up to us, and perceiving we were so weakly mann'd, attacked us without waiting for the Frigate. The fifteen Men who were on board the Prize Ship, being scarce sufficient to work her, appeared of no great Consequence to them. They fastened only upon our Vessel, and as they perceived that, being too weak to venture

to board them, out of Necessity we were forced to resolve upon keeping in our own Ship, they did not fail to regulate themselves thereupon. To dispatch us more speedily they loaded their Cannon with Case-shot, and provoked at us, that notwithstanding all these Precautions, we did not submit to strike; they run upon us every Moment with their heavy Ship, that broke us all to Pieces; and they would inevitably have sunk us, if we had not prudently determined to surrender.

The Captain found our Prize had been very roughly handled; and piqued at the Resistance we had dared to make with such unequal Forces, he treated us very harshly, both in Words and Actions. He laid us in Irons notwithstanding our Wounds, and left us the rest of the Day without suffering them to be dressed. By this Usage several of my Companions perished, whose Wounds would not else have proved mortal. Considering, however, the next Day that we were reduced to not above twenty Men, he permitted our Surgeon to take
care

care of us, and three Days after took off our Irons.

It was only because we fell into her Way that the *Jersey* took us, she expected that Fortune designed her for greater Favours. They continued to cruize to the North of *Hispaniola*, dragging us after them as in Triumph. We earnestly wished that they might meet with some large *French* or *Spanish* Vessel, that we might revolt during the Engagement ; our Prayers were not heard, and the *Jersey* made no other Capture ; they remained, however, so long at Sea that their Water failed them, and they were obliged to send their Sloops ashore in the Night to procure more.

The Sight of our own Coasts gave us so furious a Desire of striving to shake off our Slavery, that it was impossible to resist it. One Evening, by the Moonlight, having perceived the Cape *Tiburon*, I undertook, with three other Privateers as enterprizing as myself, to save ourselves by swimming thither, tho' it was

was above a League distant from us. We should perhaps have succeeded in this dangerous Undertaking but for an Accident that happened to us. One of my three Companions, who was my greatest Intimate, and a very bad Swimmer, insisting upon being in the Party, was soon exhausted ; we were not above a Quarter of the Way when he called out to me ; I went to his Assistance, and he lean'd upon me for a few Moments to rest himself ; after which he began to swim again, but finding plainly that he should never have Strength to reach the Cape, he thought it more proper to put on his Chains again, than to break them foolishly by drowning himself ; he cry'd out then for Assistance, and discovered our Flight. They immediately shot off a Gun, to advertise the Sloops which were ashore to come and take us, which they did, not without regaling us with some Strokes of their Oars, by way of Prelude to the Sufferings we were to undergo. They put us again in Irons, as soon as we were on board the *Ferfey*, and conveyed us in that Situation to *Jamaica*.

There

There we were delivered up to an old bald-headed Governor, who had the utmost Aversion to the *French*, tho' he was a *French* Man himself. He ordered us to be confined three Leagues from *Kingston*, in a Prison where they usually put their deserting Negroes. Eight Days after, he sent for us to exhort us to serve against the *French*, offering me in particular a larger Vessel than that I had lost: We all answered him without Hesitation, that we were born under the white Flag, and under that we would die. Irritated at our Answer, which appeared a Reproach to him for having turned his Coat, he gave Orders very charitably that our Provisions should be diminished, and that we should be reconducted to Prison through Ways full of Briars, and of a kind of Thorns, call'd *Aaquettes*, whose sharp Points tore our naked Legs, and run into the Soles of our Feet. As soon as we arrived at the Prison we were obliged carefully to pull these out of one another's Feet; for every Point that was left in the Flesh would have formed a painful Abscess.

The

The Design this Renegado had formed, of constraining us to betray our Country as he had done, procured us so often the Honour of going in this manner, to pay our Court to him at *Kingston*, that our Wounds were no sooner healed but they were renewed. Besides this, the Soldiers who conducted us, glad to find themselves authorized to use us roughly, tormented us a thousand Ways, being perswaded it was a Pleasure to the Governor. During the Space of six Months that we remained in this horrible Place, five of our Comrades, in which Number was the Philosopher, sunk under the Miseries they made us suffer. These unfortunate Prisoners contributed themselves after their Deaths to augment our Pains, since they forced us to let them consume before our Eyes, without permitting us to cover them with Earth, and to give them at least that poor Interment.

The first, whose Death put an End to his Misery, was called the *Baron*. It was said that he was the Son of a Man of Distinction in *France*, who bore that Title ; I do not remember what Family

ly he was of, for I never heard his Name pronounced but once. This unhappy Companion of our Misfortunes had no sooner given the last Sigh, than he was stretched out upon four Poles, and exposed before the Door of the Prison. We had no Trouble to drive the Beasts and Birds of Prey from his Body, the poor Wretch having only a Skin stretched over his Bones, and the Heats of the Climate soon made a Skeleton of him.

The Cruelty of the Governor did not succeed according to his Expectation; he could never force us to imitate his Baseness. This obliged him to send us to *England*, with a Fleet of forty Merchant Ships which were going thither, under the Convoy of four Men of War. As to us, we were landed in *Ireland*, and put in the Prison of *King'sale*, where we found Company enough of our own Nation, there being then fifteen hundred *French* Prisoners there.

By changing our Prison we only changed our Tormentors, with this Difference, that those of *Jamaica* used us
ill

ill to make us enter into their Service against *France*, but these of *Kingſale* did it only to entertain themselves, and satisfy their natural Barbarity. The Soldiers and the Goaler, named Master *Piper*, and who might with Justice have been called Master *Villain*, seemed to have nothing in View but to dispatch us silently and by degrees. Besides that, he apprehended a Reprizal; he dreaded lest the Queen should be informed of his Behaviour; for he was thoroughly sensible that that Princess, whose Nature was humane and generous, would have caused him to be punished exemplarily, if she had known to what a Degree he had carried on his Barbarity.

'Tis certain that their highest Recreation was to see us suffer. These Devils entertained themselves by making us fight for a Piece of Meat or Bread, as they would their Dogs. Those amongst us who bore our Sufferings in Silence, without being able to submit to give these inhuman Wretches a Diversion so worthy of their Brutality, were not the least to be pitied, since they let them perish with Hunger, as they were Cowards,

ards, they said, that did not deserve a Subsistence. They loaded them with Blows every Morning, when they made us pass in Review to take an Account of us, and in the most rigorous Weather they would neither allow them Straw nor a Covering ; whilst those who fought heartily, that they might have the Honour of contributing to the Diversion of our Sovereign Lords, Master *Piper* and the Soldiers, were something better treated.

I saw several of my Companions perish thus miserably, who, as they were dying, conjured me and the other Privateers to revenge their Deaths, if we had ever the Happiness to be delivered from this terrible Imprisonment. Our Executioners had established a Law, which shewed plainly the great Pleasure they took in these Spectacles. The Conditions of this Law were, that he amongst us who fought against all that presented themselves, and remained the Conqueror, should be called the *Cock* of the Prisoners ; and to render this honourable Title still more to be desired, they annexed to it the Right of sharing out the
Portions

Portions of all the rest, and taking, for his own Mouth and his Friends, what was the most tolerable of the Provisions, and this to continue till he met with one who conquered him.

This Law made me take the Resolution of employing all the Strength I had left to become the *Cock*, and to procure a Possibility of dragging on a miserable Life some Time, for me and my Friends. But it was not easy for me to execute this Design successfully; I was to dispossess a strong Soldier of *Bretaigne* out of the Place, who had already killed four or five Prisoners who had the Temerity to dispute it with him. These Combats were the more proper to prolong the Pleasure of the Soldiers, as they were obliged to fight without Weapons, and the Victory was never completed but by the Death of the Vanquished. Nothing could have been better imagined than this Regulation, because the Person who dared to enter the Lists against the *Cock*, being always something near his own Strength, generally defended his Life for several Hours.

What

What a Delight for the Gentlemen our Spectators!

I long hesitated upon challenging this redoubtable Defendant, whom I wished to overcome; when I examined him attentively, I despaired of conquering him. He was a large, well-set, black Fellow, and appeared to me to have twice my Strength; besides, I had heard that those of *Bretagne* were the strongest Wrestlers in the World: The Time, however, pressed me to determine; my Strength diminished every Day for want of Nourishment, and I saw my Companions at the last Gasps. At length an Accident happened that made me take my Resolution.

One of the Centinels having heard me murmur, upon occasion of the Shares that the *Cock* had given us, called to him and told him that I threaten'd him. He came up to me directly, and asked me with an insulting Laugh, if I had not a Mind to take upon myself the Care of giving them in my Turn; that he should be very glad to see if I had Courage enough for that. This Brava-
do

do fired me in a Moment ; I looked upon the *Cock* as no more than a Chicken, and I told him with Fury, that I took him at his Word. The Soldiers and some of the Prisoners made a Circle round us in an Instant ; I let them see that the *Canadians* did not yield to the *Bretaignes* either in Strength or Address ; I extended him at his Length upon the Ground, and so roughly, that he lay for dead. I felt a Horror myself at my Victory, and I could pursue it no farther, tho' to render it compleat the Law demanded the Death of the Vanquish'd. The Spectators contented themselves with seeing him speechless, and Master *Piper*, having ordered him to be carried off, proclaimed me *Cock* of the Prisoners.

I did not long exercise my Employment, not that any one forced me to lose it in the same manner that I gained it. The Victory which I had won fill'd all the Prisoners with Terror, who having imagined that there was no Man so strong as my *Bretaigne*, were not in the least tempted to attack his Conqueror. I preserved my Post, therefore, gloriously for about a Fortnight, at the End
of

of which I fell ill ; and not being able then any longer to acquit myself of the Functions of my Charge, I lost the Privileges of it.

Behold my Comrades and myself now again reduced to suffer Hunger, and above that the excessive and severe Cold that then reign'd *, which proved very serviceable to the Designs of our Tyrants. There was not a Day passed without the Death of ten or twelve Prisoners. I remember that in those dreadful Moments our highest Wishes were, not to want Bread and clean Straw ; for we might better have laid upon the Ground than upon the Straw they gave us, which they changed so seldom, that it was consumed to Dust, and gave the most offensive Smell : With all this our Bolster was a Stone, and between four of us we had a miserable Blanket, so wore that it would not bear touching. In this intollerable Condition we bid each other adieu continually, and were reckoning about how many Days each of us might have to live ; less touched with Death itself, than we were with the Impossibility

* In *January*, 1710.

lity we were under of revenging ourselves. Our Religion, I confess, ought to have obliged us to make a better Use of our Misfortunes ; but we had not Virtue enough to be capable of such an Effort.

Amongst the rest of the Prisoners, there were some of those Beggars by Profession, who not having been able to forget their first Trade, tho' they had carried a Musket, were so continually fatiguing every body who came to the Prison with their Lamentations, that they were always catching a few Half-pence, and by this they found means to prolong their Misery. One of these Wretches seeing me at the Extremity, and by consequence incapable of defending myself, came to me, reproach'd me with the Death of his Relation, the *Bretaigne*, who had indeed taken it in his Head to die after our Combat, and began to strike me with his Feet upon my Face, and stamp upon my Breast; I must have been very ill indeed, since I had not even Strength enough to swear at him.

I was sensible notwithstanding, and I heard my Comrades, who found themselves too weak to be able to assist me, asking one another if there were none amongst us strong enough to rise, and knock down this Wretch. I had been always before ignorant of what it was to be patient, and I had a painful Trial of it during the rest of the Day. I never in my Life prayed so fervently as I did then ; I only desired to be restored to Health for a quarter of an Hour, but the Motive of my Prayer did not render it worthy of being granted, neither was it.

Towards Night I resolved to take some Nourishment, if I may give that Name to about half an Ounce of Bread Crumbs steeped in Water ; this, however, procured me a Sleep of three or four Hours, so that the next Morning I imagined I had almost recovered my Strength. About Ten o'Clock my Enemy, who, I suppose, had breakfasted upon some Alms that had been given him, laid down upon the Straw not far from me, and fell asleep immediately. I felt a secret Joy, and disposing myself,
with-

without the least Hesitation, to dispatch this poor Wretch, who offered himself to my Vengeance, I began to drag myself towards him, rolling along with me my Bolster, which was the only Instrument I could make use of to succeed in my Design: When I was close to my Victim, I implored inwardly the Assistance of Heaven, as if I was preparing for the most worthy Action upon Earth, not doubting but the Lord would strengthen my Arm, as he had done that of *Judith's*. But tho' the Stone did not weigh above seven or eight Pounds at most, yet, when I endeavoured to raise it to knock out the Brains of my Enemy, it seemed to me as heavy as the Rock of *Sisyphus*.

What a Mortification to me, to find my Expectation thus frustrated! What, said I to myself, after having a hundred Times raised from the Ground Weights of two or three hundred Pounds, I can't now lift up one of seven! O Heaven! must my Weakness thus betray my Resentment! I was so touched with this Thought, and felt my Heart pressed with so lively a Sense of Sorrow, that I
could

could not forbear bursting out into Tears. It was for the first Time in my Life that I had ever shed any. My Companions on their Side attentive to my Actions, having perceived that I had only made a useless Effort to revenge myself, could not restrain theirs. So moving a Scene surprized the Goaler, who was then coming in : He asked us why we were in such Affliction ; and when he had heard the generous Cause of my Despair, for I made no Mystery of it to him, he told me with a compassionate Air, that he would take Care of me, for he loved a Man of Courage.

Master *Piper* by this worthy Pity discovered still more his inhuman Nature ; imagining he saw in my Procedure all the Barbarity and Fierceness of his own Composition, he could not forbear interesting himself for a Man who seemed to sympathize so nearly with him. In two Hours after, he gave me strong Proofs of it ; they brought me from him a Porringer of Broth out of his own Pot, with a little Piece of Beef upon it. I drank a little of the Broth,

I

and

and sucked in some of the Meat, after having given a Share of it to my Comrades, of whom there were two who refused to eat, that they might be the sooner, they said, delivered from their Misery ; and indeed one of them expired the Night following, and the other was found two Days after choaked with Earth and Dirt that he had swallowed.

As to me, given up to the Maxims of the Savages, which I had been imbued with from my Infancy, I hardened myself against my evil Fate. I breath'd only Vengeance, and would not have eat but to enable me to satisfy that Passion. I took an Oath to my unfortunate Privateers, that I would not leave their Miseries unpunished, protesting to them, that if I yielded to the Care the Goaler took of preserving my Life, it was solely with a Desire of revenging them : An Oath which I kept but too strictly afterwards, for the Punishment of the Sins of the first *English* that fell into my Hands. I now implore the Pardon of Heaven for it ; but I must say I became cruel only by their Example. 'Tis well known,

known, that before this I always treated my Prisoners with Humanity.

Though I had drawn upon myself the Compassion of Master *Piper*, the Regard he had for me did not go such lengths as to procure me a Cordial, or any restorative Aliment; his Generosity did not extend so far neither; and what he called keeping me well, was only not letting me die for Hunger. However, I should have been very well satisfied with him, if he would in regard to me have carried his Charity so far as to assist my Companions; but they had not had the Happiness to acquire his Esteem in so worthy a Manner. I saw them all perish at length one after another.

I had more than once remarked, that those amongst the Prisoners who understood any Trade, and whom the Townsmen of *Kingsale* came to fetch in the Morning and brought back at Night, after having made them work all the Day, were the least miserable. If they led a hard and painful Life, they had the Consolation of eating as much as

they pleased ; which, next to Revenge, I then imagined to be the greatest of Pleasures. I resolved therefore to tell the first Artisan who came to demand a Workman, that I was of his Profession. Fortune, which then delighted in persecuting me, made me fall into very bad Hands. A Gunsmith presented himself, to whom none of them expressed a Desire to go. He was reckoned a Brute, who took the Workmen more for the Pleasure of abusing them, than to make them work. I was no sooner in his House, but I perceived that he was not one of the best-natured of Mortals : He had a harsh Tone of Voice, and a most brutal Look.

He gave me immediately the Barrel of a Fuzil to file. I set about it handily enough for him to find no fault with me. Indeed I was marvellously excited to Industry by the Sight of a great Kettle that was upon the Fire, in which I saw a Mixture of Leeks, Onions, Cabbages, and Crufts of Bread. All this made my Mouth water, and inspired me with an Ardour for my Work. At length the Time of Eating, that delicious

cious Time, arrived ; and to raise my Felicity to the Height, instead of giving me my Share only, as I expected, they did me the Honour to suffer me to put my Hand into the Kettle, without foreseeing the Consequences of it ; for perhaps they might have given me my Portion, if they had guess'd at the Destruction I was going to make. However, the Gunsmith, his Wife, and his Daughter, far from testifying that they repented their having left me at liberty to eat as I pleased, seemed to be diverted with seeing me devour all that was in the Kettle. The Daughter of the Gunsmith, above all astonished at my Appetite, said to her Father : Certainly this Man is not made as we are, he must be hollow down to his Feet. He has eat twice as much as we have done, put it all together. Very true, replied the Master ; and I suppose he designs to work in Proportion ; otherwise we shall not be Friends.

Such was my Design indeed. I was too satisfied with my Entertainment, not to be industrious at my Work. I wish'd to preserve so good a Business, and to

make my Court the better to my Master, I would willingly have stripp'd to my Shirt if I had had one; but I had long had nothing left but a poor wretched Linnen Waistcoat, which Modesty forbid me to throw off. I set to my Work then very gayly, and for a Quarter of an Hour Things went on very well. I only felt my Arms a little more heavy than they were before Dinner. I was so filled with the Repast I had made, that I stood in need of a Nap of three or four Hours, to put me in a Condition of working as I ought to have done. It was with much Trouble that I kept my Eyes open, Sleep unfortunately stole upon me by Surprize. In vain I made all possible Efforts to rouze my Senses, he spread his gentlest Poppies round me, the File dropp'd out of my Hands, and I fell asleep as I stood.

The Gunsmith, who observed me, not finding his Account in these sleepy Fits, roused me the first Time with so terrible a Voice, that for a Quarter of an Hour I overcame my Inclination to it; but the God of Sleep had too strongly seized upon his Prey, so easily
to

to abandon it, and I again yielded to his Power. Then, the Master employing a more efficacious Method to awake me, applied a most dreadful Blow with his File upon my Shoulder-bone, which wounded me severely. There needed no more to dissipate my Sleep entirely, and rouse my Fury against the Gunsmith; that Instant I discharged so fierce a Stroke upon his Head with the Barrel of the Fuzil that I was filing, that he stood in no need of a second to fall motionless at my Feet.

As soon as I saw him upon the Ground and weltering in his Blood, I left the House, and took my Flight, without knowing where I should find a Refuge; but I did not go far before I was stopped by a Crowd of People that pursued me, and who gave themselves the Trouble to carry me back to Prison. Whilst they were conducting me thither, I recollected that the Gunsmith, when he presented me to his Wife in the Morning, had told her with a discontented Look, that Master *Piper* did just what he pleased; and that this Mr. Goaler would send five or six Work-

men to some Tradesmen, whilst he would grant but one to another, and that with an Ill-will. Upon this I laid the Plan of the most audacious Stratagem. I had the Assurance to tell Master *Piper*, that it was upon his Account I quarrelled with the Gunsmith, and that this wretched Mechanic had said a thousand impertinent Things to me of him, which I could not bear.

Our haughty Keeper took Fire upon this false Report, and forbid me to be laid in Irons, saying openly, that the Gunsmith had been treated as he deserved. When I saw that the Goaler gave credit frankly to what I had said to him, I began to give him a Detail of the insolent Discourses this Artisan had held about him, and the Answers I had made him. But not finding himself possessed of so much Patience as the Length of my Recital exacted from him, or else fearing to hear something too near the Truth, he imposed Silence upon me: 'Tis enough, my Friend, said he to me, I am satisfied with thee: I shall acknowledge the Zeal thou hast shewn for me by punishing a perfidious Neighbour,

Neighbour, whom in a proper Time and Place I shall make repent of it.

The Effects of his Gratitude followed his Promises very soon, and to recompence me for having so courageously taken his Part, or rather for my happy Faculty of Lying, he gave me a good Soldier's Coat, made me eat alone, and doubled my Portion. Besides this, he permitted me to walk when I would in the Court of the Prison. This Taste of Liberty soon inspired me with a violent Desire of procuring it more fully, and I was not long in searching the Means of it. There was against the Wall a long Pole, upon which the Soldiers sometimes hung their Linnen to dry. I had need of no other Ladder to scale the Walls, and it served me still more commodiously to descend into the Street. After which I left the Town with all imaginable Expedition.

It was in this Manner that one Moonlight Night I left the Prison of *King-sale*. I marched till it was Day-light across the Lands, still bending my Course towards the North, according to the

Design I had formed of repairing to *Cork*, from whence I was not ignorant that Vessels often departed for *America*. At Sun-rise I got into a Wood, where I rested myself till it was Noon. I left there the Soldiers Coat that Master *Piper* had so generously made me a Present of, and was a little mortified to lose it thus; but after having considered that it might make me known, I made a Sacrifice of it to my Safety. I began my Journey again, and never stopped during the remainder of the Day.

The Fear of falling into the Hands of the Constables, hindered me from following the High-roads, which occasioned my going six times the Way I needed to have done, if I had had nothing to fear. At Night I supp'd on some Cabbages, that I had picked up as I pass'd by a Garden. I eat the Insides of them, and made a Bed of the largest Leaves. Such unwholesome Nourishment, and the Fatigues of so long a March, rendered me so weak, that the third Day, not being able to walk any longer, I was obliged to lay down in a Meadow, which served me for two Uses,

to

to rest me, and for my Subsistence. But indeed my Stomach, unused to such Meat, soon discharged it; and I remained with an Inanition which must have been infallibly followed by Death, if a charitable old Man, advertised by some Children who had seen me eating Grass, had not come to assist me with two other Persons, who conveyed me to a neighbouring Village.

They laid me at first upon some Straw in a Barn, where a Man of a very uncommon Stature, who seemed to me only to be a Domestick, drew near to me. He questioned me upon my Religion, and being convinced by my Answers that I was a Catholick, he immediately made them carry me into a little Chamber, where having repaired as soon as they had put me into Bed, he appeared to interest himself in my Preservation. The first thing that they did, was to clear me, by a strong Emetick, of all the Herbs that I had eat. This Remedy, though a very salutary one, exhausted the little Strength I had left, and I remained motionless for a Quarter of an Hour. The tall Man believ-

ing

ing that I was going to expire, ordered all who were in the Chamber to withdraw, then coming close to my Ear, he told me, with a loud Voice, to implore the Pardon of God, which I did mentally, not being able to pronounce one Word; I heard that he gave me the Absolution, after which he retired.

Upon his Retreat, several other Persons came in with Milk, of which, by tormenting me, they forced me to swallow some Drops: This being done, they thought proper to leave me to take some Rest, and certainly by that they saved my Life; for I fell into a profound Sleep, which lasted five or six Hours without Interruption, and the next Day I found myself out of Danger: I expected then to have seen again the tall Man that I have spoke of, but he never appeared again. I judged that it was some Priest concealed in the Family or the Neighbourhood: Nay, I do not yet know whether it was not a Bishop, who, like those of the Primitive Church, had no Train nor Equipage, but his good Works, and his Virtues. What makes me imagine it was a Prelate was, that
after

after he had absolved me, and exhorted me to offer my Sufferings to the Lord, if I am not mistaken, he gave his Blessing to the Host, who was alone in the Chamber with us, and who fell upon his Knees to receive it. I say, if I was not mistaken, for in the Condition I was then in, I could scarce depend upon the Testimony of my Eyes.

After some Days, I felt myself perfectly recovered; then the good People, to whom I ow'd this Obligation, to compleat generously the fulfilling all the Duties of Hospitality, put me into the Road to *Cork*, with six Shillings, a good Suit of Cloaths, two new Shirts, and a little Bag, in which there was much more Bread and Salt Beef than I could use before I came to my Journey's End, since I had but four Miles to go.

I was too unfortunate to be able to preserve all this any Time; I had not walked three Quarters of an Hour before I met two Constables. They would perhaps have let me pass by, without saying any thing to me, if the Dread of returning to Prison had not made me
quit

quit the high Road, and run towards a Wood, which was at a small Distance from it. By this I rendered myself suspected; they judging that I fled from them, and that it was not certainly without a Reason: They soon overtook me, and summoned me to yield to them without Resistance. If I had had equal Arms, I should easily have put them to Flight, or constrained them to ask for Quarter; I endeavoured to defend myself, however, as much disarmed as I was, but I got nothing by it but Blows. They were the strongest Party. They carried me to the House of a Peasant, where they tied my Hands and Feet, and gave me in Charge to the Master of the Family, till their Return from an Expedition they were upon. They recommended to him to watch carefully over me, under Pain of being imprisoned for me, assuring him, on the contrary, that he should be well paid for his Trouble, if he did not let me escape. They even promised him all my Spoils, the better to engage him to keep me securely.

The

The Countryman was enchanted with this Promise, and looking upon my Cloaths as a Treasure that already belonged to him, he took the Precaution, lest I should spoil them in the Night, to strip me of them before-hand, and put me on an old ragged Suit of his. To this effect, he, with four or five others, began to act the Parts of my *Valets de Chambre*, he untied my Hands, and made this Exchange even to my Shirt included. I suffered all with admirable Patience; and my Goaler was so satisfied with my Docility, that he listen'd to the Prayers I made him, not to tie me so very straitly, that I might be able to lay down and sleep. When I had supped upon the Provisions I had in my Knap sack, I threw myself upon some Straw, where, out of Curiosity searching in the Pockets of the ragged Habit they had put me on, what was my Transport at finding there a Knife, which they had not been so careful as to remember. I soon knew what Use I could make of it; it served me very readily to cut the Cords with which I was tied, and as soon as I had Reason to think that the Peasant and his Family were

were asleep, I went softly out of the House, fully satisfied at coming off with the Loss of my Cloaths.

I again took the Road to *Cork*, where I arrived early in the Morning; but not chusing to enter the Town in the Equipage that these Peasants had put me in, I passed the Night at the Port, which I examined with great Attention. I remarked several Sloops that it would have been easy for me to have carried off, if I had had Companions, but I did not pretend to undertake such an Enterprize alone. When I saw the Night approach, I retired to a kind of Farm, at the End of the Suburbs. I sought for a Place there where I might sleep under Covert, and conceal myself. I perceived a little Stable open, at a Distance from any House, and I went into it softly.

I had scarce set my Foot in it, before I heard two Animals grunt, as if to advertise me that the Place was taken. If I had had to deal with reasonable Creatures, I should have employed Prayers and Civility, to obtain a small Share of
their

their Lodging ; but finding myself under a Necessity of placing myself without their Permission, I advanced towards them, taking care, as much as possible, not to incommode them ; however, with all my Complaisance, I had the Misfortune to tread upon one of their Legs, and the Pain that he felt made him rise in a Passion to go out. I immediately seized upon his Place, and did not restore it to him when he returned, after having staid a Quarter of an Hour at the Door ; nevertheless he stretched himself by me, after which we were very quiet, and continued good Friends for the rest of the Night.

I passed the following Night in the same Lodging, but as I had eat nothing since my leaving the Peasant's, Hunger began once more to affect me ; in vain, for to refresh myself, I drank abundantly of a fine clear Stream, that run about twenty Paces from the Farm ; this only appeased my Stomach for a Moment. At length, unable to support this any longer, on the third Day I came out of my Retreat, to see if any one would offer me a Morfel of Bread. I walked

a considerable Time upon the Port, where, notwithstanding the dreadful Hunger that tormented me, I took a Pleasure in considering the Vessels that presented themselves to my View; and I did not see one under Sail, without representing to myself what I would do if it was mine. I had an Air that inspired Compassion, and I perceived plainly, by the manner in which several People looked upon me, that they would willingly have given me an Alms, if I could have brought myself to demand it of them, but that my Haughtiness absolutely prevented me from submitting to. I was not, however, any longer the Master of myself, when a Maid-Servant came and threw out, almost at my Feet, a Basket-full of the Refuse of the Kitchen, among which I remarked some Remains of Roots and Cabbages, that tempted me to such a Degree, that I seized upon them with the most excessive Greediness.

Two Quakers, who by Chance passed by me at that Moment, were Witnesses of this Action, and penetrated with the Misery to which they were sensible I must be reduced, and willing to accommodate them-

themselves to the Shame which prevented me from holding out my Hands to the Passengers, they each of them threw me a Shilling, without stopping to speak to me, lest it should give me Pain. I made them a low Bow, and gathered up this Charity, with which I went into a poor Eating-House, where I made myself amends for my long Fast ; after this, retiring to the Farm, I regained my Stable.

I did not pass this Night in so much Tranquility as I had done the preceding, the enormous Repast which I had indulged myself in banished all Peace and Concord ; for in a few Hours after I was laid down, a burning Fever seized upon my Blood, and threw me into a Delirium. Contrary to the Laws of Hospitality, I began to fight and strike my two Hosts, crying out, as if I had been in a Battle with my Savages against the *English*. My Reason sometimes returned, and whilst that assisted me I kept Silence ; but as soon as ever it forsook me, I began again to cry out and struggle. I suppose I went on thus for the whole Night, and during my
Deli-

Delirium several Things happened that I had no Knowledge of: All that I can say is, that in the Morning, when I recovered the Use of my Senses, I was not a little astonished to find myself in the midst of a Dozen Women, who said to one another, *The Man's a dying ! The Man's a dying !*

From the Stable I had been conveyed to a Chamber tollerably furnished, and put into a very good Bed. I learn'd that I owed this charitable Assistance to an *English* Lady, the Widow of Mr. *Eckson*, an Officer of *Cork*, who had been killed in the last Campaign. This Lady had been educated at *London* by a *French* Woman, who had inspired her with a Kindness and Benevolence for the *French*, of which she then gave me a Proof. She assured me, that with her I was in perfect Safety, and promised to procure me a Passage over into *France*, as soon as my Health was thoroughly re-established, and, at the same Time, furnished me with Linnen and with Cloaths. This charitable Lady might bestow all these Favours upon me with Impunity ; my Figure preserved her

Cha-

Character from the least Imputation of Scandal; I was so filthy, so pale, so meagre, and so hideous, that I had more the Look of a Spectre than that of a Man.

I remained above two Months with Mrs. *Eckson*, who, to avoid the Reproaches of a Nation so much at Enmity with our's, made me pass for a Relation of the *French* Woman who had brought her up. During that Time I recovered my Health intirely. Then my generous Hostess, who was sensible that, notwithstanding the Interest she took in my Fate, I should never enjoy a perfect Tranquility of Mind whilst I was in *Ireland*, was the first to search an Occasion of conveying me from thence. She put me on board a Ship bound to *Jamaica*, the Captain of which engaged himself to set me ashore in *Hispaniola*, where, as I said, I had an agreeable Establishment.

I took care upon the Voyage, not to tell the *English* who I was, and upon what Design I went to the *Antilles*. If the Captain had known me, notwithstanding

standing the Promise he had given to Mrs. *Eckson*, he would have sent me to the Bottom of the Sea, to finish a Life there, which I only preserved to make the most cruel War against his Nation. When they made the *Cape Tiburon*, as they usually do in going from *Europe* to *Jamaica*, he put me into the Sloop, and ordered me to be set ashore. From thence going from one Plantation to another, I reached at length to *Petit Goave*, where Monsieur *de Choiseuil* was extremely surprized to see me again.

He could not, without shivering with Indignation, hear the Recital I made him of the rigorous Treatment I had received at *Jamaica*, and in *Ireland*. I painted it to him in such lively Colours, that he applauded the Impatience I testified, to revenge myself and all the unhappy Wretches who had perished in this long and cruel Slavery. Whilst I was in this pious Disposition, he gave me a Vessel, called the *Brave*, and for Associates ninety Men, whom he found means to assemble in less than a Month, and

and who were all highly proper to second my Intentions.

I soon put to Sea with these Companions. It was now above two Years since I had had a Cutlass at my Side; I burn'd with Impatience to make a Trial upon the *English*, whether I still knew how to make use of it. Instead of waiting for an Opportunity, which might have made me languish for some Time, I went in search of one upon the Coasts of *Jamaica*, cruizing audaciously within Sight of their Ports.

The first Vessel that we met, which was destined to bear all the Weight of our Vengeance and Fury, had only eighteen Guns, and a hundred and thirty Men. The Captain who commanded it was a sly, one-ey'd, old Sailor, who had already had to do with the Privateers. As soon as he saw that we were so, and that we disposed ourselves to attack him, far from endeavouring to make a Chace, he seemed to design to make Head against us, or at least to parley with us. In effect, he sent his Sloop to propose, that we should both
con-

continue our different Routes. He told us, he believed we could neither of us do better ; that he was very sensible there was nothing to be got with us ; and that if we would detach two Men to come on board him, he would let them see, that he carried nothing that was worth so much as the Powder that we should lose by him, as, unfortunately for him, he had missed of his Loading: In a word, that there was nothing but Blows to be got on either Side.

The one-ey'd Captain said the Truth ; we did not at all doubt of it, and it would have been Prudence not to come to Action with him ; but we were in Search of the *English*, and we desired to meet them more to use them ill than to carry off their Riches. The Captain having found, by our Answer, that we rejected his Proposition, as reasonable as it was, made us fully sensible that Fear had had no Share in it. He bore up to us courageously, and did not refuse the Boarding ; yet it succeeded ill with him, for he was obliged to strike, after an Engagement of a quarter of an Hour.

Our

Our Prize, in effect, justified what the Captain had said of it; it appear'd so poor to us, that we blew it up, after having set ashore what remain'd of the Company; and having given those unhappy Wretches a Treatment, that the Remembrance of that which the *French* had suffered in the Prisons of *Kingsale*, could scarce render excusable. I only leave you your Lives, said I to them, that you may inform your Correspondents in *Ireland*, that I shall treat in this manner all the *English* that fall into my Hands, till I have revenged, at least Man for Man, fifteen hundred *French* Prisoners, whom they forced to perish miserably in the Prisons of *Kingsale*. Let them recollect the Chevallier *Beauchene*, added I; they know the Name; this is only a Prelude to what they must expect from me.

We made off with the greatest Dispatch from the Coasts of *Jamaica*, not doubting but the Ships that were stationed there would soon come in Search of us upon that Sea. We held a Council, and it was resolved that we would go to cruize near the *Canaries*, where we might, beside the *English*, meet with some *Portu-*

tuguese Vessels, which seldom return'd that Way, it was said, without a large Quantity of Gold-Dust from the Coast of *Africa*.

This Run was very fatiguing to us, and the contrary Winds made us employ so much Time in it, that as soon almost as we arrived we were obliged to put in for Refreshment at the *Canaries*. We designed to have rested ourselves at these Islands, till about a Dozen of our Brethren, who were then ill, should be thoroughly recover'd; but there were in the Town of *Canary*, as well as in that of *St. Domingo*, Ladies, who, not hating the *French*, had soon acquired us the Aversion of the *Spaniards*. We perceived at first, that we must be more reserved there than in *America*, and use greater Circumspection, as Justice was very rigorously obeyed in the Place, and they had not the same Respect for the Name of Privateer that they had in the *Antilles*. The Governor himself seem'd to affect not to use us with all the Regard that we imagined he ought to have done.

He

He shewed so little Complaisance to us, that he concern'd himself as if it had been his own Quarrel, in a little Dispute we had with some of the Citizens, and which occasioned our leaving the Place sooner than we had designed. The Detail of the Affair was this: Several of the Citizens took upon them one Day to pretend to visit our Vessel, in order to search for two young Women, who most certainly were not there, and who seeing that all the Harm that passed in the Town was placed to our Account, I presume, had made use of the Opportunity to get themselves carried off by their Lovers. We declared to the Citizens, that we had neither Maid nor Wife on board, and that they must be satisfied with our Declaration. The Citizens went and made their Complaints of us to the Governor, who deliver'd them an Order for us to let them enter into our Vessel, and search it thoroughly. They came to the Number of above a hundred to present this Order to us, which we despised instead of respecting. Upon this the Citizens, thinking to intimidate us, began to talk of Prisons, Dungeons, and Irons, which we no sooner heard, but

we threw ourselves upon these bullying Gentlemen, who at first seemed to put themselves in a Posture of Defence ; we laid about a Dozen of them dead upon the Spot, and the rest took their Flight. Then, without Loss of Time, we weighed Anchor directly, highly satisfied with having demolished the Citizens.

We were scarce got off to Sea, before we perceived with Sorrow that three of our Companions were wanting. We were certain they were not killed in the Engagement, since none of our Party had been so much as wounded ; therefore we were perswaded they were in the Town. To recover them again with a high Hand, we cruized upon the Coasts of the Island, and about a League from the Port meeting with a large *Spanish* Bark, who not imagining she had any Reason to distrust us, suffered us to board her, and we soon made ourselves Masters of her. We brought her in Tow within Sight of *Canary* ; and we sent two *Spaniards* in our Sloop to tell the Governor, that if he did not send us back our three Privateers upon the Spot, we would set fire to our Prize
before

before his Eyes, and blow her up with the threescore Men in her that composed her Crew. The Reprisal neither suiting with the Governor, nor the *Spaniards*, they restored our three Brethren to us, who themselves brought back our Sloop.

We coasted for some Time upon the Shore of *Africa*, from whence we went to *Senegall*, and from thence to the Fort of *Goeree*. We cruized after this along the Grain Coast, where, whilst we took in Wood and Water, some Negroes made us understand that there was a large *English* Ship in the River *Gambia*. The Natives of this Coast hate the *English*. Monsieur *de Gennes* found it so in the Year one thousand six hundred and ninety-five, when he took from them in this River the Island and Fort of *St. James*, which he blew up, after having carried off above eighty Pieces of Cannon, and a large Quantity of Merchandize. We went up the River as far as the *Little Island of Dogs*, where we found the Vessel we were in search of. She made a long and noble Resistance,

sistance, though she had but sixteen Guns and sixty Men.

There was on board of this Vessel two *French* Prisoners, who told us they had been dragged from Ocean to Ocean for several Years, to force them to redeem themselves by an exorbitant Ransom that was demanded of them, and which they were not in a Situation to pay. They had been taken in endeavouring to return into *France* from *Canada*, where one of them had retired to avoid the Consequences of a Duel, and the other to search for and bring back into *France*, by Order of the Minister, a Woman, whose Death had render'd his Attempt fruitless.

I questioned this last extremely, and the more I considered him, the more I thought he was not unknown to me. *Montreal, Chambly, Sorel, Frontenac*, he knew all those Places. I desired him to inform me of his Name, and he told he was called the Count *de Monneville*. This Name destroyed all my Ideas, but I recollected them again the next Day in Conversation with him; our Discourse
gave

gave Occasion to a Knowledge of each other, that afforded us both an equal Pleasure. As we were speaking of the Expedition of Monsieur *de Frontenac* against the *Iroquese*, I told him that I was myself at that Time amongst those Savages, and that I was taken Prisoner, and brought back to my Parents, by an Officer, called *Le Gendre*.

At the Name of *Le Gendre*, he interrupted me, and looking upon me with more Attention than he had done before, It was I then, cried he, who did you that Service, for that was the Name which I then bore. Can it be possible, added he, that you was one of those Children whom I carried off from the *Iroquese*? No, certainly, replied I, but you see in me the young Man, who foolishly acting the *Iroquese*, tho' a *Canadian*, had very near forfeited his Life for the ridiculous Desire of passing in earnest for a Savage. Therefore, I have done more for you now, continued I smiling, than you did for me then, since I deliver you from the Hands of a Nation that you detest; and, on the contrary, you carried me off from a Country that

I love, and for which I resolved to die. I own that I am still indebted to you, resumed he, and I hope that you will put me under a Necessity of owing you still more. I desired him to explain himself more clearly, and he assured me, that, except from the Pleasure of meeting me again, the Liberty I had restor'd would have no Charms for him, whilst he enjoyed it out of *France*.

I protested to him, that I did not think of obliging him by halves ; that I would do all that depended upon me to find an Opportunity of sending him back to his own Country ; and that it was the least Proof he might expect from the Gratitude I had for all the generous Treatment which I received from him, when he might have used me like a Slave. The Friendship, which from that Moment we renewed with each other, in a few Days became so strong, that we began to live together like two Brothers, who loved each other tenderly. We received him as a Privateer, together with the Gentleman who was with him ; and, without having a Regard to the Date of their Reception, we
shared

shared the Booty equally with them, though they were themselves a Part of it.

Monneville had a gay, lively Wit, full of Repartee, which made his Conversation highly entertaining. The Joy of seeing himself at Liberty, and the Hopes of returning soon again into his native Country, where, he said, he had a fine Seat, and an Estate of a considerable Revenue, made him recover all the Gaiety that I had seen him with in *Canada*. He amused us so agreeably every Day, by the Histories he related to us, that we were continually surrounding him, and were as attentive to hearken to him, as the Populace when they are listening to the Discourse of a Quack Orator.

One Day, when he was melancholly and thoughtful, contrary to his usual Custom, I said to him, Monsieur, the Count, you are no longer with us; you are thinking incessantly of your Return into *France*; you count all the Moments whilst it is delayed. Do not think that a Crime in me, replied he sighing. I

had formed a happy Union in my own Country, which I had scarce tasted the Sweets of, when an absolute Command obliged me to return into *Canada*, and from thence I fell into those Chains which you have broke. You ought to pardon me the Impatience I have to go and dry up the Tears of a Mother, and of a Wife, who are both infinitely dear to me.

He was almost in Tears as he pronounced these last Words, and as there was not a Privateer but had conceiv'd an Affection for him, we were all sensible of his Grief; not to irritate it, we left him to reflect at Leisure upon the Remembrance of his Family, yet we had all a Curiosity to hear the Recital of his Adventures, and I in particular. Therefore, the next Day, seeing he had recovered his usual Humour, we conjured him to relate to us the History of his Life. Gentlemen, said he to us, you demand a Detail of me, which will prove a very long one; you will certainly repent of your Curiosity, if I have the Indiscretion to satisfy it.

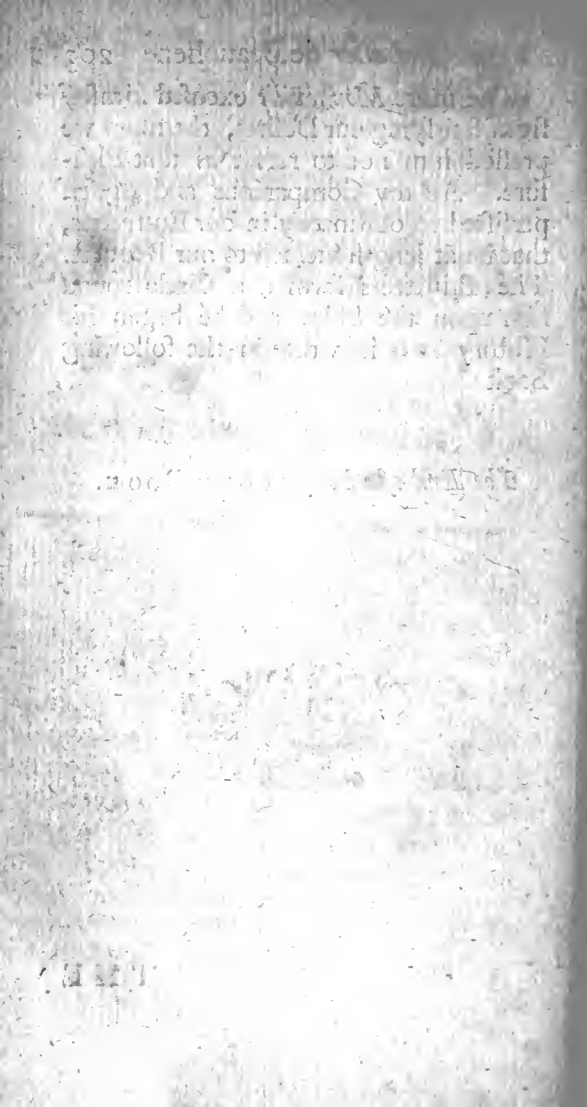
The

The more *Monneville* excused himself from satisfying our Desires, the more we pressed him not to refuse us that Pleasure. All my Companions and myself persisted so obstinately in our Entreaties, that he at length yielded to our Request. The Privateers formed a Circle round him upon the Ship, and he began his History as it is wrote in the following Book.

The End of the SECOND BOOK.



THE





THE
ADVENTURES
OF THE
Chevalier de Beauchene.

BOOK III.

Monneville relates the mysterious History of his Birth. He is brought up till the Age of twelve under the Disguise of a Girl in the Castle of the Baron du Mesnil, with Lucilia the sole Heiress of that Nobleman. A Financer, deceived by the Dress of Monneville, carries him to Paris, under the Pretext of placing him with a Lady in quality of her Woman; but having other Views upon this false Peasant, he places her
in

in a Convent as a Pensioner, spares nothing for her Education, and at length proposes to marry her. Monneville, to avoid his Importunities, searches and at length finds Means to leave the Convent. He puts on the Habit of a Cavalier, makes a Conquest of an Actress, and becomes Clerk to a great Man in the Revenues, who endeavours to marry him to his Daughter by force. Monneville refuses to consent to it. Upon his Refusal he is arrested, conveyed to Prison, and the next Day sent to Canada.



IN one thousand six hundred and sixty-seven, after the Death of *Philip* the IVth, King of *Spain*, *Louis* the XIVth, resolving to do himself Justice, and maintain the Rights he had by the Queen, *Maria Theresa* of *Austria*, his Consort, over several Domains in the *Low Countries*, put himself at the Head of his Troops, and marched into *Flanders* with a most shining Army.

The

The Count *de Monneville*, who had distinguished himself in the former Wars, would not fail of attending that Monarch, and was accompanied by his two Sons, who had just finished their Exercises at *Paris*, the eldest being seventeen, and the other only sixteen Years old. He wished that fighting by his Side in a Company of Horse which he commanded, they might see, that if the *French Noblesse* always perform Prodigies of Valour, they are still more invincible when they combat under the Eye of their Sovereign.

The Siege of *Charleroy* was the opening of the Campaign, and our two young Volunteers had the Happiness to signalize themselves by some Actions of Valour, which *Monsieur de Turenne* himself did not disdain to honour with his Praise. He did more, he told the Count obligingly, that he ought to moderate their Ardour, 'till Experience had informed them that there was more requisite to form an Officer besides Fire and Impetuosity.

Douay,

Douay, Tournay, Lisle and Oudenarde, these Cities all subdued in the same Campaign, made the Treaty of Triple Alliance publick, which was concluded between *England, Holland and Sweden*. The Count, who observed his two Sons during all these Sieges, perceived with Pleasure that they were born for the Field, and forgetting the Counsel of *Monsieur de Turenne*, he procured them every Occasion of instructing themselves in Danger. He every Day put their Courage to the Test, without considering that they were too young, and too delicate to support, unhurt, all the Fatigues to which he exposed them. This exhausted their Strength to such a Degree, that they fell ill, and were unable to mount on Horseback.

Their Father seeing the Necessity they were under of Repose, obliged them to quit the Army, and sent them to his Estate, where he proposed soon to re-join them, and to pass with them great Part of the Winter Quarter. He flattered himself with a deceitful Hope: He did not consider that he served under a King who made no Distinctions
of

of Seasons where Glory was concerned. *Louis* marched towards *Franch-Comte* in the Depth of Winter, and in a small Time made a Conquest of that Province ; but the Siege of *Dol* proved fatal to several Officers of Distinction, and amongst the rest to the Count *de Monneville*, who received a Musquet-shot, of which he died.

Whilst the Father expired before *Dol*, his eldest Son was drawing near his End at his Estate : A languishing Disorder accompanied by continual Pains, that were occasioned by an ill-cured Wound, carried him off in a small Time, notwithstanding all the Remedies the Chevalier his Brother could procure for his Recovery. The Chevalier, who had the sincerest Friendship for him, was still more afflicted for his Loss, when he learned the unhappy Fate of his Father. This News raised his Sorrow to the Height. Though by losing these two Objects that were so dear to him he was become the Master of his own Fortune, which indeed was not very considerable, he could not comfort himself for these two fatal Events ; retired within

within his House he lived so dejected a Life, that he must have killed himself with his Chagrin, if the Marquis *de Ganderon*, his Neighbour, had abandoned him to his Melancholly ; but that humane Nobleman, in order to dissipate it, drew him to his Seat almost every Day, and detained him there as long as he could possibly, by Amusements which insensibly moderated his Affliction.

The Marquis had a Daughter of about Thirteen, an only Child, extremely handsome, and who was to be one of the richest Heiresses in the Province. He loved her tenderly, and educated her with the Care of a Governor as well as that of a Father : History, sacred and profane, Fable, Geography, Heraldry, every thing that could contribute to render a Person accomplished, he taught her himself, as he was highly capable of doing. In a word, his whole Business was her Education. My Child, said he to her often, cultivate your Mind whilst you are young, and acquire those Talents that may make you respected and beloved in the World ;
Riches

Riches alone can never render you happy ; and if they could, consider that their Possession is not more solid than that of Beauty. Those two Advantages are of very uncertain Duration. Nothing is a real Merit but what Fortune cannot dispossess you of. A virtuous Heart, a well cultivated Mind, these are the only Blessings that are Proof against all Time and Chance.

As to Madam *de Ganderon*, she occupied herself entirely with the Detail of her Domestick Affairs, trusting to her Husband for the Care of forming the Manners of her Daughter. This young Lady so often heard them both pity the Destiny of the Chevalier, now by the Death of his Brother become the Count, that she also took a great Interest in his Misfortunes. She saw him every Day ; and the more Regard she perceived her Parents to express for him, the more she thought herself obliged to contribute her Share towards his Consolation. She wished to follow the good Examples that were given her.

For

For two Years she imagined she had only the same Compassion for the young Count as possessed her Father and the Marchioness, who treating him as if he had been their own Son, disposed her inadvertently to chuse him for her Lover. On the other hand, the extreme Reserve of the Count's Behaviour to her procuring him a Liberty of seeing her familiarly, by Degrees, without knowing his Danger, he became deeply in Love with her; but however ardent the Passion was which he felt for *Mademoiselle de Ganderon*, he had for a considerable Time the Strength to condemn it to Silence, lest by declaring it, he should displease the Marquis and the Marchioness, when an unforeseen Conjunction forced his Secret from him.

Madame de Ganderon one Day took her Daughter in private, and told her, that a President, who had a large Estate joining to *Ganderon*, had demanded her in Marriage for his eldest Son, and had obtain'd her of her Father; but that it was agreed, upon Account of the Youth of the future Bride, that the Marriage should not be celebrated in two Years, at the Expiration

ration of which Time, the intended Bridegroom was to enter into a handsome Post. Mademoiselle *de Ganderon*, more surprized than charmed with this News, not knowing what Answer to make, returned Thanks to her Mother for the Clause of two Years Delay, which she told her, was at her Desire, and withdrew into the Garden, very uneasy, and very thoughtful. She had no Knowledge of the Son of the President, and she wished he might resemble the young Count. Upon this she began to plunge herself into a thousand Reflections, that distracted her, without her being able to penetrate the Cause of them, when *Monneville* came up to her.

She felt an Emotion of Joy when she remarked that her Mother, who followed him, had stopped to give some Orders, and making use of the Opportunity, she informed him, in few Words, of the projected Marriage; and then, without giving him Time to pronounce a Word, she asked him, with an Air of Vivacity, if, when she was no longer in the Castle of *Ganderon*, he would still come there
every

every Day, and whether he should not sometimes wish to see her there. The Count, transported with Pleasure, told her, pressing her Hand with Tenderness, that he loved her too much to survive her Loss one Moment.

I know not whether the Marchioness, who then came to interrupt their Conversation, did not do them a good Office in it; for after having so abruptly made a mutual Declaration of their secret Sentiments, they remain'd both speechless; they soon, however, recovered themselves, and if they were prevented from continuing their Conversation in Words, they gave each other in return such tender and passionate Glances, that they had Reason to be satisfied with the Day, tho' those that followed pass'd still more agreeably. Lovers, when once they have dared to say, I love, insensibly advance much farther than they imagine. They resemble People who are passing over the Sea, and who find themselves at the End of their Voyage, without so much as perceiving that they have changed their Place. The Count and his Mistress lived in a most perfect Intelligence;

gence ; they passed their Days together in such Tranquility, that the Time of their Separation drew near before they once had thought of it.

One Morning, when that Count came as usual to dine with the Marquis, he found so numerous a Company, that he chose rather to return home, than to sit down at Table with so many People, most of whom were unknown to him. He knew not what Company he avoided ; it was the Family of his Rival, who came to conclude the Marriage proposed.

Mademoiselle *de Ganderon*, who had not before seen the Husband that was destined for her, was not enchanted with his Figure. It was not indeed necessary that she should be prejudiced in Favour of another, to remark that the Son of the President was no very agreeable Object. Imagine to yourselves, a long, simple-looking Scholar, mounted upon two Legs, as long and as small as Stilts. His Mind answered perfectly to his Person ; if the Conversation turned upon any common Subjects, he kept a stupid Silence ; if they were willing he should
speak,

ſpeak, they muſt put him upon antient Hiſtory, or *Roman* Poetry, and he did not ſpeak ten *French* Words without bringing in ſome *Latin* Phraſe.

A Lover of this kind was not very proper to make a tender Impreſſion upon ſo lively a Genius as that of *Made-moiſelle de Ganderon*. Nevertheleſs, tho' he diſpleaſed her exceſſively, far from teſtifying it to him by an Air of Coldneſs, ſhe had the Malice to feign that ſhe took a Pleaſure in the ſtudied Expreſſions he made uſe of: She even carried her Complaiſance ſo far, as to paſs the whole Afternoon in converſing, and being retired with him in private; but in the Evening ſhe could not forbear diverting herſelf at his Expence, before the whole Company. The Marquiſs *de Ganderon*, during the Supper, aſked her, if ſhe was ſatiſfied with the Converſation of *Monſieur the Preſident's Son*. 'Tis impoſſible to be more ſo, replied ſhe, this young Gentlemen poſſeſſes the Hiſtory of Antiquity to Perfection; he has related to me the Hiſtory of *Cyrus* in his Cradle; and tho' he talked above

two Hours, he has left the Prince in his Leading-Strings.

This Stroke, and several others of the same Nature, diverted all the Persons at the Table, except the future Bridegroom, who taking it ill that *Mademoiselle de Ganderon* should pretend to turn him into Ridicule, from that Moment began to feel some Movements of Aversion for her; notwithstanding this, the Marquis and the President concluded their Agreement. When the Parents of the Great are satisfied as to Birth and Fortune, they seldom concern themselves about the rest.

Whilst Monsieur and Madame *de Ganderon*, who returned home with the President, were busy with him in drawing up the Articles of the Contract, the Count making use of the Liberty he always had, of being at the Marquis's when he pleased, came thither, and finding his Mistress alone, he learned from her all that had passed. They were both excessively moved: My dear Count, said *Mademoiselle de Ganderon* to him, 'tis done, To-morrow, perhaps, you

lose me for ever. 'Tis To-morrow then that I must lose my Life, replied the Lover; you shall hear of my Death before you are in the Arms of another. What can be done to prevent this Misfortune? resumed the Lady. Speak; I am capable of undertaking every thing to preserve myself for you.

This Discourse was insensibly followed by an Infinity of the same Kind, and you may judge, that these Lovers finding themselves without any Witnesses, consulted only their Love in the Resolution they should take. *Monneville* could only think of one, which his Mistress had the Weakness to approve, and the Extravagance of which she soon after had Opportunity of repenting at leisure; for the very next Day, as the Marquis was at Dinner, he received a Letter from the President, which contained these Words:

“ My Son conveyed himself secretly
“ from hence this Morning, in order to
“ return to *Paris*. He wrote to me at
“ the first Posthouse a Billet, by which
“ he declares to me, that he renounces
Made-

“ Mademoiselle *de Ganderon* for ever,
“ whose satyrical Wit is not in the least
“ suitable to his Inclinations ; and adds,
“ that if I pretend to constrain him to
“ marry her against his Will, he will
“ shut himself up for ever in a Retreat
“ where he shall be free from the Ty-
“ ranny of Paternal Power. I am ex-
“ tremely mortified at such a disagree-
“ able Accident, and conjure you to
“ accept the humblest Excuses I can
“ make for the Procedure of my Son.”

If this News at first gave an Excess of Joy to our Lovers, Inquietude was not long before it mingled its Bitterness with their unguided Pleasures. *Mademoiselle de Ganderon* began by Degrees to perceive that she had had too much Complaisance for the Count, and representing then to herself, that the Condition she was in would much sooner excite the Anger than the Pity of the Marquiss, she repented, but too late, of her Imprudence. This Reflection, which she ought to have made before, put her under a Necessity of finding some Expedient to conceal from her Parents the Knowledge of a Fault, which she then

wished she could hide from her own Remorse.

She held a Council upon this Head with her Lover, who shared her Alarms, judging, as she did, that it was of the highest Importance to them both, that the Family should be ignorant of their Indiscretion. To this Effect it was agreed that the Lady should appear melancholly and dejected, which she could very easily do in the present Conjunction; that she should avoid all Company, and that under the Pretence of the Affront she had received from the Son of the President, she should desire to retire into a Convent for some Months.

She performed her Part extremely well. She affected to be highly piqued at the Behaviour of the Son of the President, testified an extreme Desire of entering into a Monastery, and her Demand, which passed for a noble and generous Resentment, was easily granted. Monsieur *de Ganderon* writ to a Relation he had at *Paris*, to desire her to chuse out a Religious House in that great City, where his Daughter might
acquire

acquire those little Qualifications which were wanting in her Education, and which could not be procured in the Province. The Lady at *Paris* gave him in Answer, that she would with great Pleasure have taken that Care upon her, but that being just upon departing, to pass two or three Months in the Country, she conjured him to defer this till her Return, assuring him, that she would let him know the very Day of her Arrival at *Paris*.

This good Lady kept her Word as exactly as if she had divined that there was no Time to lose. The Marquis and Madame *de Ganderon*, who saw their Daughter languish with Impatience and Inquietude, dreading lest it should make her ill, made her depart immediately, under the Conduct of an old Governess, who had brought her up from her Infancy. They carried her in their own Equipage to the nearest Town, where they had bespoke two Places in the public Coach, and having bid her adieu, mixed her Tears with those that bathed her Face, and returned very dejectedly to the Castle.

Two Days before this Separation, the Count and his Mistress had concerted what should be done during their Absence, and the Lady had advised her Lover to be more assiduous than ever to her Parents, for two Reasons; the first, to banish all Suspicion; and the second, that he might the more frequently be in a Place which would make him remember her.

Now, Gentlemen, in a Moment I shall appear upon the Stage; you expected it no doubt, and I read in your Eyes, that you will not be in the least surprized to hear what I am going to relate to you. Mademoiselle *de Ganderon* made this Journey to *Paris* only for my Sake; she was willing that I should receive my Birth in that Centre of all the Pleasures, that can be tasted in this lower World, in that Chaos of mysterious Intrigues, so favourable to clandestine Marriages.

Monneville was interrupted in this Part of his History by all the Privateers, who were eager to make him their Compliments upon the stolen Tenderness

derness of which he was the worthy Pledge. We embraced him in our Turns, protesting to him, that we looked upon it as one of the greatest Favours of Fortune to have the Happiness of possessing in our Vessel a Child of Love. He received our Rallery agreeably, and joined in it himself; after which he resumed his Discourse in this manner:

To return to *Mademoiselle de Ganderon*, who I may from this Time call my Mother, she happened to be alone in the Coach with her Governess, and she was not very sorry for it, being more able to reflect upon her Affairs; she flattered herself, that she should soon find Acquaintance at *Paris*, and that she might easily get some discreet Person there, whose Assistance would be of the greatest Use to her. But, whether she had been mistaken in her Calculation, or whether the wretched Coach she was in incommoded her, or, in fine, that I finding myself not much at my Ease, in a Body pressed by too strait Stays, thought proper to precipitate my leaving so close a Prison; the Lady, however, towards the End of the second

Day's Journey, was attacked with some Uneasinesses that gave her a Presage of my approaching Birth.

A little Village, situated as if on purpose in the Middle of the Plain, for the Convenience of Travellers, was destined to have the Honour of being my Birth-Place. The Hostess of the Inn was a young Woman, who had been married about a Year, and had lain-in of a Daughter not three Days before. *Mademoiselle de Ganderon* immediately went to her, and, sliding some Crowns into her Hand, discovered the Secret to her. The Hostess, gained by this little Liberality, offered willingly to serve my Mother, and acquitted herself of it with great Dexterity. She ordered her a little Chamber close to her own, and placed the Governess in another, at a considerable Distance. After having taken this Precaution, she sent for her Midwife, whom my Mother brought over to her Interest in the same manner as she had done the Hostess.

It was Time that she should have Assistance, I never ceased playing the little Devil

Devil till I was at Liberty; I should then have spoil'd all by my Cries, if they had not been taken for those of the Daughter of the Hostess. I had the good Fortune to cry alone, the other Child not being tempted to enter into the least Duet with me.

This Delivery was most happy, tho' they did not invoke the triple Divinity of *Hecate*; and the Midwife, who staid the whole Night with my Mother, exhausted all her Art to put her in a Condition of supporting the Motion of the Coach. To gain some Hours Repose, they told the Coachman in the Morning that *Mademoiselle de Ganderon* was indisposed, and begged him to defer his Departure a little. He would have been insensible to that Request, if it had not been accompanied by a Pistole, and an Order to provide him a handsome Breakfast. This made him have Patience, and gave my Mother Leisure to prepare for her Departure with less Precipitation; yet the Efforts she must use to rise, and to dress herself, one should have imagined, would have occasioned the Death of a Person of so delicate a

Constitution. But we see every Day in such Cases surprizing Instances of Courage.

Before she began her Journey again she went into the Chamber of the Hostess, and having again required Secrecy of her, she drew out of her Pocket a Purse in which were thirty *Louis d'Ors*, which she easily perswaded her to accept. — Take this Money, my good Friend, said she to her, as a Pledge, till you receive further Marks of my Gratitude, and of that of a young Gentleman whom you will soon see here. Look out a Nurse for my Son, I conjure you, and don't let him go out of your Knowledge. Afterwards, having desired Ink and Paper, she writ some Lines upon a Sheet of it, which she sealed with her own Seal, and gave it to the Hostess, saying to her, You must deliver this Billet to a Gentleman who will come here, and who will shew you another Letter writ by the same Hand and sealed with the same Seal. When she had spoke thus, she desired to see me, and after having kiss'd me sighing, she went into the Coach with the Help
of

of the good old Governess, and placed herself in such a Manner that she was almost laid down.

They arrived late at the Place where they were to dine; she only took some Chicken Broth without coming out of the Coach, and five or six Hours of Repose, which she enjoyed the following Night, gave her the Strength to present herself the next Day to her Aunt, who seeing her pale and disordered only attributed it piously to the Fatigues of the Journey. I doubt not, Gentlemen, but this Relation of my Mother's bringing me into the World, seems to you to entrench a little upon Probability. It does not appear possible to you, perhaps, that this Scene should pass in an Inn without the old Governess having the least Knowledge of it. But I have given you the Detail as I had it from my Mother, who did not say to me whether the *Duegna* was or was not in the Secret.

The Joy of being free from so critical an Affair, was of no small Assistance towards speedily re-establishing
the

the Health of Mademoiselle *de Ganderon*, who did not stay long with her Aunt, and insisted upon being placed as a Pensioner with the *Religieuses*. She was conducted to a Convent that was in the Neighbourhood, and the old Governante was sent back into the Province, according to the Orders given by the Marquiss *de Ganderon*. My Mother, before her Retreat, did not forget to write to the Count *de Monneville*, by the *Adresse* that they had agreed upon. She sent him Word to repair immediately to the Inn where she had left me, and informed him of what he was to do to procure a Sight of me.

My Father, impatient to hear from his Mistress, had no sooner received her Letter, then he departed and went to the Place which she had directed him to. He desired to speak to the Hostess, and having made himself known to her for the Cavalier who had the greatest Interest in what passed there upon the Night that gave me my Being, he desired her to relate to him all the Circumstances of that Adventure; which she had no sooner finished, than he informed

formed himself whether I was still alive, and where I was, testifying an extream Desire to see me. The Hostess then resuming her Discourse, said to him : Monsieur, I am going to trust a Secret of the greatest Importance to you, and I conjure you most humbly not to disclose it. My Father promised her he would not, and she went on in this Manner :

Madam, your Spouse, when she left this Place recommended to me to take great Care of her Son, and not to suffer him out of my Sight. Whilst I desired the Midwife to find me out a careful Nurse, I kept him in my own Bed the whole Day and the following Night. I know not what Uneasiness I had in my Sleep, but it is too certain that at my Awaking I found one of the Children dead by my Side. Oh! Heavens! cried the Count, trembling, my Son is gone! He lives still, replied the Hostess, listen to me, if you please, without Interruption.

I rose immediately, pursued she ; I bolted the Door, and returning to the
Bed

Bed, I found it was my own Daughter that I had stifled. I had perceived my Husband, who happened to be then absent, had expressed more Affection to me since my being with Child. My Daughter was our first Child ; and by her Death I feared to lose the Love of her Father. I took my Resolution without Hesitation. I buried my Child in a Cellar that was never used, and I took your Son in her Place. I deceived my Confidant herself, when she came to inform me that she had found a Nurse. I made a false Confidence to her, and told her that a Person unknown had come secretly and fetched away the little Boy by Orders from his Mother. Thus, Monsieur, added she, this Child whom you see, and who I call my Daughter, is your Son, or at least he is the Lady's who gave me the Charge of him. At these Words the Count took me in his Arms, and gave me a thousand Caresses, moistening my Face with Tears that witnessed the Joy with which his Heart was penetrated.

He remained in the Inn several Days, during which he frequently made the Hostess

Hostess repeat the melancholly Manner of my Birth, and loaded me with his Careffes. At length, when he departed in order to return home, he made this Woman a Present of all the Money he had with him, recommending me strongly to her Care, and went from me with far less Speed than he came.

When he was returned to his Estate, he designed immediately to have instructed his dear Mistress, in covered Terms, of what had passed between the Hostess and him ; but a second Letter which he received from my Mother prevented him. She forbid him absolutely to write to her, having been informed at her Entrance into the Convent, that all Letters addressed to the Pensioners were stopped and sent to their Relations. To make use of this Advice, which in effect was not to be neglected, he gave up his Commerce of Letters, with the pleasing Hope that *Mademoiselle de Ganderon* would not long be separated from him.

He came more than once to see me during the first Year, under the Pretext
of

of an Affair which he said he had with a neighbouring Gentleman. He remained in the Inn several Days, and whilst he was there he had me continually in his Arms. I was weaned presently, because my young Nurse did not think herself obliged out of Kindness to me, to excuse herself from giving her Husband fresh Marks of her Fertility. I had a rosy Complexion, a healthful Look, and every Body made her their Compliments upon my Beauty.

This good Woman had a second Child who lived no longer than the first, and three Weeks after she was hired to be the Nurse to one of which the Baronefs *du Mesnil* was ready to lie in. The Baron was a Nobleman who had a Castle close to the Village, and who about nine or ten Months before had married a young and rich Heirefs, with whom he had been in Love for some Time. I went with the Hostess to reside at the Castle *du Mesnil*, and we left the Host her Husband at the Inn. We were scarce arrived at the Baron's, when the Baronefs brought into the World

a Daughter, with whom I was brought up.

There happened at that Time a considerable Change in the Castle *de Ganderon*. The Marchioness died, and this Event was the Occasion of the Marquis's taking the Resolution of leaving his Daughter in the Convent, till he found an Opportunity of marrying her according to his Views, that was, to a Gentleman of a considerable Fortune; for he was not a Man that would have accepted of the Count *de Monneville* for a Son-in-Law, whatever Esteem and Friendship he might have for him. My Father and my Mother, who were fully sensible of the Sentiments of Monsieur *de Ganderon* upon that Head, expected their Happiness only from the Favour of Heaven.

Things were in this Situation, when they were informed in the Province that *Spain* had joined itself to the Emperor and the *Dutch* against the *French*. All the Noblesse, eager to fly to the Assistance of their Country, put themselves in Motion. My Father, the Son of a
Man

Man who had acquired so much Reputation in the Field, could not dispense with himself from preparing for it. The Smallness of his Fortune not permitting him to have a splendid Equipage, he departed with a Valet de Chambre and a Footman. He first took Leave of the Marquis, and then took a Turn to the Village where I was, in order to see me. He managed so well, that he had a private Conference with my Nurse. She told him upon what Footing I was at the Castle *du Mesnil*; and she appeared to him to be so attached to me, that he felt himself consoled by it for the Necessity he was under of leaving his Son, perhaps, for a considerable Time. After having made her a Present, to engage her to redouble her Cares for my small Person, he repaired to the Army, or rather to *Rheims*, where they were to assemble under the Command of Monsieur *de Turenne*.

The Marquis *de Bourlemont*, who knew and loved my Father, was extremely pleased to see him again, and received him as a Volunteer in his Regiment. He presented him to the General,

neral, who remembering him, took a Pleasure in occupying his Courage, by employing him in several Sieges that were formed in the Territories of the Marquifs *de Brandenburg*; and which were carried on so vigorously, that that Prince, in alarm at it, retired into the farthest Part of *Germany* and demanded a Neutrality.

The Certitude that the Count had that Valour, would never want a Recompence under such a General as Monsieur *de Turenne*; and the flattering Hope of acquiring so much Glory as might make him appear to the Marquifs *de Gandon* worthy of his Alliance, forced him upon surprizing Actions. 'Tis thus that in all Times, and in all Conditions, Love has been seen to produce noble Actions; and the Desire of pleasing the Sex, has formed many valiant Warriors. The Count *de Monneville*, in an Expedition in which the Marquifs *de Bourlemont* was killed, signalized himself by Actions which you yourselves would have admired, Gentlemen, as much accustomed as you are to Enterprizes of Temerity. But at length the Count

was.

was taken Prisoner, and did not recover his Liberty till after the Peace of *Nimeguen*.

Since my Nurse had been the same to the Daughter of the Baron *du Mesnil*, instead of loving me less than before, she seemed to have still more Tenderness for me. The Baron, on his Side extremely satisfied with the Care of this Woman, to testify his Gratitude to her, made me a thousand Caresses, and scarce made any Difference between his own Child and me. He permitted her to call me Sister, and all the Domesticks, after his Example, used us alike. Far from abusing the Civilities they were so good to let me share with *Lucilia*, which was the Name of the Daughter of this Nobleman, I used my utmost Assiduity to gain her Affections; and I succeeded in it so thoroughly, that in our little Sports, she took it ill that I expressed so much Deference for her, and constrain'd her by my Respect.

My pretended Mother, who was no nearer to me than to *Lucilia*, perceiving the Attachment I had for her, propos'd
to

to herself to watch over us. Our Familiarities, tho' innocent, yet they gave her an Alarm; she fear'd lest Chance should discover my Sex, which was yet unknown to myself; and, in this Fear, she never ceased preaching to us of the Duties of Modesty, which made such strong Impressions upon our young Minds, that we concealed ourselves carefully from each other upon the slightest Occasions. In a word, I was continually in her Sight during the Day, and I lay with her in the Night.

Our Love augmented faster than the Number of our Years, and when I recollect some Passages of my Infancy, I conclude that this Passion knows no Age that cannot feel its Power. My Nurse had accustomed me to kiss the Hand of the Baron when he gave me any thing; I observed the same respectful Ceremony with my little Sister, who was so perswaded that I took a Pleasure in it, that when I had been punished, or received any other Chagrin, she would come to me with the greatest Eagerness to give me her Hand to kiss. Thirty Years have not effaced from my Memory

ry

ry a thousand such Trifles, that proved, demonstratively, that our Hearts were formed for each other, and would one Day be united, as in effect they have been since, and are so still, notwithstanding the Cruelty of our Fate, which keeps us asunder.

I passed my earliest Years in this manner in the Castle *du Mesnil*, and five were already gone since my Nurse had heard of the Count *de Monneville*, my Father. She supposed him to be dead, and yet she did not in the least diminish the Kindness she had for me; 'tis true, she had an Interest in it, to deceive her Husband, who looking upon me as his only Child, carested me as much as if I had been really so; she waited till I was in a more advanced Age before she discovered to him this Error.

One Evening the Baron *du Mesnil* went out of the Castle, according to his Custom, to shoot a Rabbit, and did not return for a considerable Time; when he came, he order'd them not to bring Lights, and went to his Chamber with great Precipitation. Tho' there were no Lights
in

in the Way, yet it was remark'd that he brought in two Fuzils. He put one of them into his Closet, and going out again with the other that Instant, he said that he should not come home to Supper. He did not return till very late, without saying where he had been; and when he was in his Apartment, contrary to his usual Custom, he would not permit his People to undress him; this gave the Domesticks Occasion of Conjecture, and their Imagination had still a greater Scope the next Morning, when they saw some Spots of Blood upon his Linnen, which he had not perceived himself. Every one made his Reflections thereupon, and imagined what they thought proper.

Two Days after this, the Husband of the Nurse came to her in the Castle, and told her in private that he was uneasy, that the Gentleman had not laid at the Inn these two Nights. What Gentleman? replied his Wife with an astonished Look. The Gentleman, return'd he, who came so often to us five or six Years ago. That fine Man, who seem'd to love us so much!—Do'st not thou remem-

remember?—with his Laced Cloaths, who was always giving something to our little Girl?

My Nurse, by this Description, easily knew the Original, and pressed her Husband to tell her why he was uneasy upon that Gentleman's Account. It is because this honest Gentleman, said the Host, came to the Village the Day before Yesterday, and alighted at my Door. He asked after your Health, and after the Child's; and afterwards taking my Fuzil, he went out of the Inn, saying, he would take a Turn in the Wood by the Castle, after which he would return to sup and lodge with me; but I have never seen him since, and yet his Horse is still in my Stable.

You will easily conceive the Impression this Discourse made upon my Nurse. She trembled with Horror, and let herself be prejudiced with the most dreadful Forebodings. She charged her Husband to inform himself privately if no Person had seen this Gentleman, whilst, on her Side, she made the same Enquiries. All their Researches were in vain.

At

At the End of three Days, as the Host had not appeared at the Castle, his Wife, impatient to know whether he had heard any thing of the Gentleman in question, resolved to go to the Village, and discourse with her Husband concerning it. *Lucilia* and I accompanied our Nurse, the Way not being so long but we could go it with Pleasure. I remember it still perfectly well; we walked before her, my Sister and I drawing a little Chariot, which one of the Domesticks had made for us.

When we were in the midst of the Wood, which separates the Castle from the Village, the Nurse made us take a cross Foot-path to shorten the Way; but, after having gone about twenty Paces, two little Dogs that were with us stopped of a sudden, and fell a barking as if they had seen some other Animal. This frightened *Lucilia* and me, and we run to be secure, under the Wing of our Nurse, who advanced towards the Dogs, to see what made them bark, and even howl so dreadfully; she remarked, that a little Heap of Earth newly removed, trod down with the Feet, and covered with

VOL. I. M Bushes,

242 *The Adventures of*
Bushes, was the Cause of this Howling.

She was frighten'd in her Turn, and as the Loss of the Count had already filled her Mind with tragical Ideas, some Drops of Blood, which she perceived upon the Stones, increased her Suspicions, which she immediately made haste to impart to her Husband. He did not think them ill-founded, and could not delay the enlightening of them; he came with us into the Wood, under the Pretext of conducting us to the Castle. His Wife shewed him the Place where the Dogs had stopped, and upon which they again began to howl. Then the Host gave some Strokes with a Mattock, and he had not gone above half a Foot deep when he discover'd the Body, and knew the Cloaths of the Gentleman for whom he had been in Pain. The Nurse doubted not but this Murder was the Work of the Baron, and that that Nobleman, whose violent Nature she knew, having met this unfortunate Gentleman shooting near his Castle, had imagined it was an Insult to him, had shot him with his Fuzil, and afterwards buried him. The
Host

Hoft was of the fame Opinion; but far from being willing to expofe himfelf to the Refentment of the Baron, by publishing this Difcovery, he refolved firmly to keep it fecret. He covered the Body again with Earth, and put the Bufhes upon it as they were before, whilft his Wife carried back *Lucilia* and I to the Caftle. She returned back again immediately, rejoined her Husband, and went with him to the Inn, to fhut themfelves up, in order to fearch the Valife of the affaffinated Cavalier.

They found no Money; there was nothing in it but Papers, a Memorandum of the Debts he had contracted in *Germany*, fome Letters of Mademoifelle *de Ganderon's*, and amongft the reft, that which fhe had charged my Nurfe with, to be delivered to my Father. I have fince feen them in the Hands of my Mother, to whom this good Woman, when fhe found herfelf dying, reftored them, at the fame Time informing her of all the Circumftances that I have now related to you.

We once more interrupted *Monneville* in his Part, to deplore the Fate of his Father ; which furnished some of the more serious Privateers with an Opportunity of moralizing upon the Instability of human Happiness ; but the rest having no Taste for moral Reflections, like Men who were prepared for every Event of Life, pressed *Monneville* to continue his History, which he thus resumed :

I lost my Father, perhaps, at a Time when he came to join me never to part from me again. His Death did not alter the Attachment that my Nurse had for me ; all the Change that I found in her Behaviour to me was, that she seemed more melancholly than before, and sometimes, without even speaking to me, she would let fall some Tears as she looked upon me. She often recommended to me to apply myself to Reading, and still more to Writing, without telling me the particular Reason she had that I should write well. I was, however, not long ignorant of it ; for she, being become a Widow in about six Months after the Death of my Father,

one

one Day took me aside, and spoke to me in these Terms :

My dear Child, tho' you are still very young, I find you so reasonable, that I shall no longer delay making you a Confident of what regards you alone, but upon which the Happiness of us both depends. My Husband, who by his Death has left me without Support, hath prevented me from doing what I could have wished for you, and from testifying to how great a Degree I love you. The Protection of the Baron is the only Resource that is left me, and not only you will make me lose that, but you will expose me to receiving the most rigorous Treatment from that Nobleman, if you do not follow the Advice that I shall give you. He will punish you also with me, we must therefore, by a prudent Conduct, preserve his Favour still some Years longer. This obliges me to reveal several Things to you, of which this is the principal : You are not a Girl. I have watched so carefully over you, that I am certain you were ignorant of it till this Moment. 'Tis to conceal your Sex that I desire

you to use your utmost Care ; 'tis that important Article that obliges me to place so great a Confidence in you, notwithstanding your Youth.

I have now, pursued she, informed you that you are not a Girl, know also, that I am not your Mother, and that you did not lose a Father in my Husband. I cannot now tell you any farther; if you can preserve the Asylum we have in the Castle, I shall discover to you the Remainder, which it is not yet Time to instruct you of. Consider, my Child, whether you find yourself capable of making use of my Advice. If you are willing to second me, I consent to take Care of you till you can do without me. If, on the contrary, you give me Reason to fear that your Imprudence should draw upon me here some unhappy Affair, I shall be obliged to abandon you.

My Nurse, as she held this Discourse to me, remarked that I was extremely astonished at it ; she felt herself struck with a Movement of Compassion ; she held out her Arms to me all in Tears ;
I

I leaped about her Neck, and promised her absolutely to do whatever she desired.

She was so little mistaken in the Opinion she had of my Discretion, that from that Time she was obliged to chide me, to constrain me to take any Diversion with *Lucilia*. I was no longer that little Sister who was always ready to laugh and play, the Difference that I began to find there was between her Situation and mine, took from me at once that Gaiety which used to entertain her. The Tendernefs I had for her was not diminished, but it became more timid and more respectful.

Three Months after the Death of the Husband of my Nurse, a violent Disease carried off suddenly the Baroness *du Mesnil*. It was no sooner known that the Baron was a Widower, than the greatest Heiresses in the Province were offered to him. The Marquis *de Ganderon* was one of the first that wished his Alliance ; on his Side, the Baron *du Mesnil*, (to whom a Gentleman, a Friend of the Marquis's, had spoke of this Affair

as from himself) thought the sole Heir-
ess of *Monfieur de Ganderon* so advan-
tagious a Match, that he immediately
went into his Equipage, together with
their common Friend, to go and de-
mand her in Marriage of the Marquis.
The Negociation was soon terminated;
these two Noblemen easily agreed upon
every Article, and concluded between
themselves, that they would take a Jour-
ney directly to *Paris*, to see if the Lady
was agreeable to the Baron.

They soon performed this Journey,
along with the Gentleman who had
been the Mediator; and the Person of
Mademoiselle de Ganderon pleased the
Baron infinitely. He had no Occasion
for seeing her twice to become more in
love with her than he had ever been with
his first Lady, and he thought of no-
thing but hastening his second Marriage.
Yet the intended Bride had lost a Part of
her Charms, by the continual Uneasi-
nesses she had been, and still continued
under; for hearing no more of *Monne-
ville*, she supposed he must be dead, and
that Thought gave her an Air of Melan-
cholly,

cholly, which was a Diminution of the Lustre of her Charms.

When the Marquiss, her Father, declared to her that he had promised her to the Baron *du Mesnil*, she endeavour'd in vain to beseech him to suffer her to renounce the World; he had no regard to her Intreaty, which he only looked upon as an Effect of the Attempts he supposed the Religieuses had made to seduce her. He represented to her, with an Air of Authority, that such a Husband as the Baron was preferable to a Monastick Life, and that, in a word, it was a Thing resolved upon. Seeing, therefore, that she could only oppose a vain Resistance to the absolute Command of her Father, she disposed herself to obey with Docility. She left the Convent, and let herself be carried in a few Days after from *Paris* to the Castle of *Ganderon*, where the Marriage was celebrated without any Pomp.

Whatever Impatience the Baron had to carry home his new Bride, he had however the Complaisance to stay a considerable Time with Monsieur de *Ganderon*;

deron; but he at length took Leave of him to repair to the Castle *du Mesnil*, where he entered with the Noise of about a Dozen Muskets, which the Inhabitants of the Village fired, to celebrate the happy Return of their Lord, and the Arrival of the new Baronesse. They were obliged to receive and return the Visits of all the neighbouring People of Distinction, which wholly took up *Madame du Mesnil* for eight or ten Days. She had not yet had Leisure to give any Attention to *Lucilia*, but she soon attached herself to her; and, far from treating her with the Severity of a Mother-in-Law, she behaved to her with a Sweetness and Tenderneſs that ravished the Baron.

The more my Nurse contemplated this young Lady, the more she thought she resembled her who had been disembarraſſed of a fatiguing Burthen in her Inn; she durst not, however, depend upon her Conjectures, and she propos'd to herself a Method of finding out the Truth of them. As to my Mother, it is certain, she did not in the least recollect my Nurse, nor had any Suspicion of

of her being so, tho' she was not ignorant, that she was in the Village where I had taken my Birth. *Lucilia*, however, by Accident gave her Occasion to think that she was amongst her old Acquaintance, and that her Nurse might perhaps be the very Hostess to whom she had intrusted me. This Circumstance deserves my relating it to you.

The Baroness was one Day in her Closet with a Book, when *Lucilia* entered, followed by my Nurse and me, and run to her, saying, My dear Mamma, will you give my little Friend leave to pay her Compliments to you? Come in, my Child, come in, said the Baroness to me, not thinking she spoke so truly; the Friendship that my Daughter has for you must assure you of mine, approach. I advanced towards her, to make a little Compliment, which I had prepared with the Assistance of my Nurse; but I was confused, without knowing why, and remained silent. It would be ridiculous, perhaps, to attribute to Instinct this Disorder of my Senses, which doubtless was an Effect of my Timidity. The Baroness imagined so, and, to encourage

encourage me to speak, she asked me how old I was, and if I was an only Child. I answered yes; and my Nurse entering into the Discourse, said to her with a feigned Simplicity: Alas! Madam, she will be no richer for it. If my Husband was still alive, she might, perhaps, hope for some small Fortune. We formerly kept an Inn in the Village for several Years, and did not succeed ill in our Business; but I have had the Misfortune to lose him, and were it not for the Favours of Monsieur the Baron, my Daughter and myself would be much to be pitied.

The Nurse as she spoke thus observed the Baroness attentively, to see if that Lady, as she listened to her, would not give some Demonstration that might turn her Doubts into Certitude. My Mother avoided that Snare; no Alteration appeared in her Countenance. With a steady, calm Look, she deplored the Fate of the Hostess, who imagining that she was deceived in the Judgment she had made of the Baroness, ceased to find any Resemblance between her and my Mother.

After

After this Conversation, Madame *du Mesnil*, being left alone in her Closet, admired how she had been able not to betray herself, when she knew the Witness of her Shame. This Thought made her blush and turn pale successively. If the Nurse had seen her then, she would have known what to have depended upon. The Discourse which my Mother had heard, threw her into a profound Reverie. She could not doubt, but the Person who had spoke, was the same Hostess to whom she had confided the Care of my Infancy; but she was far from imagining, that it was her Son whom she had seen under the Habit of a Girl. She judged either that I was dead, or that my Father had taken me out of the Hands of my Nurse to be educated elsewhere. To this Reflection succeeded another. The Count *de Monneville* is no more, said she, since it is so long since I have heard of him. The Father and the Son make me equally unhappy.

It depended upon herself, however, to hear what was become of us both. She need only have discovered herself
to

to the Hostess, whose Discretion she had already tried : But it was impossible for her to bring herself to resolve upon risking this Step. Tho' in her Heart she felt the most violent Desire of knowing our Destiny, yet her Virtue, that secretly reproached her, continually prevented it. The Wife of the Baron *du Mesnil* thought herself obliged to think differently from *Mademoiselle de Ganderon*, and engaged to sacrifice the Dictates of Love and Nature to her Duty ; that if she was unfortunate with the Baron, it might at least be without her deserving it.

She even resolved that the Nurse should leave the Castle, that she might not have continually before her Eyes a Woman, who recalled to her Memory Images which she found it but too difficult to forget. To give her a handsome Dismission, without seeming to have any Interest in it, she engages the Baron to send her back to the Village again to keep an Inn, with a Sum sufficient for her Establishment in that Way of Life, under the Pretext of recompensing her for her Services. *Lucilia,*
who

who had a proper Governess provided for her, saw my Nurse and I leave the Castle with much Regret. I was not less afflicted at our Separation; but the Case was desperate, and there was no Remedy.

The Hostess then began to enter into her former Business. Though she exacted nothing from me but what I could do with great Ease, and recommended to me to apply myself to Writing, being perswaded that with that Resource I could never want Bread; yet I was of the greatest Service to her in her domestick Affairs. I was worth three such Servants as she could keep. But as I advanced in Age I became more melancholly. I already made serious Reflections, and especially one that affected me nearly: This was the Mystery of my Birth; for my Nurse, when she confessed to me that I was not her Son, had not instructed me who was my Father, and I remained in Uncertainty of my Condition.

Sometimes, imagining that she had said enough for me to conceive an advantageous

vantageous Opinion of my Family, I had the Vanity to believe myself of Noble Blood ; and, in the haughty Emotions that these flattering Thoughts inspired me with, I burn'd with Desire to be at *Paris*, cloathed in a Manner suitable to my Sex, and to the Nobility that my Imagination had given to me. Whither was not I hurried away by the Chimera's that my Mind was continually forming? I flattered myself that I should no sooner arrive at that City, but I should meet with a Person of Distinction who would acknowledge me for his Son, and that this Acknowledgment would be attended with the most perfect Felicity. 'Tis true, these agreeable Ideas sometimes gave place to others which lowered my pleasing Expectations. I represented to myself, that a Boy of Twelve or Thirteen, without Friends and without Acquaintance, would be very much at a loss what to do with himself in *Paris* ; but Hope, still stronger than my Fears, always brought me back to the Wish of being able to try my Fortune in that great City.

One Day there passed by the Village a *Financier*, who stopped at our Inn. He had a handsome Equipage, and a great Number of Attendants. We prepared him a Dinner in the most handsome Manner we could ; and when the Expence was to be cast up, I took a Pen and Ink and drew up the Reckoning with an Ease that surprized him. He praised my Writing ; after that he considered me with some Attention, and finding a Sprightliness in my Look, with some Beauty, he asked me several Questions. I answered them in a Manner that amazed him. 'Tis a Pity, said he to me, that so handsome a Girl as you are, should be buried in a Village. Oh ! really, Monsieur, replied I, I am sorry for it enough ; but what would you have me do ? I should be glad to be with some good Lady ; I am sure that I should serve her so well that she would love me, and make my little Fortune. If you wish, returned he, to be placed in that Manner, you need only speak. I will bring you into my own Family. I have a Relation of an affable Temper, and an excellent Character, you will be very happy with her. I offer to engage
her

her to take you ; and I can assure you, that she will take upon herself the Care of settling you advantageously.

I accepted the Offers of the *Financier*, with Proteftations of Gratitude, which were accompanied by the Thanks of the Hostess. Make your Reflections upon it, you and your Mother, said he to me, I shall come by this Village again in a Fortnight. If you are then in the same Disposition, and that you make no Difficulty of trusting to the Word of a Man of Honour, whom indeed you do not know, but whose Probity I hope is writ in his Face, I will carry you to *Paris* in my Equipage, and behave to you as if you was my own Child. To this I made him no Answer but a profound Reverence ; and he, returning my Respect, went into his Coach, after having bid us adieu till his Return.

When he was departed, my Nurse asked me if I had Resolution enough to go to *Paris* with this Gentleman. Why not ? replied I ; he appears an honest Man. Perhaps he may do what he has promised for me ; and when
once

once I am with a Lady, I will seek out for some Place suitable to young Men, and I don't think but I shall be fortunate enough to find one. The Hostess was not very sorry to see me disposed to follow the *Financier*. She even drew a good Omen from it of my future Fortune; and judging that it was now Time to give myself up to the Adventures that my Stars reserved for me, she very faintly opposed my Design.

Before it was to be put in Execution, I went to pay a Visit to *Lucilia*. I took care not to speak to her of our approaching Separation; but the Idea of it that continually occur'd to me in our Conversation, in spite of myself, drew frequent Sighs from me. I even could not forbear shedding some Tears. *Lucilia* was moved with it, and attributing it to the Chagrin I had at not seeing her so often as I desired,—Comfort yourself, my dear Sister, said she embracing me, we shall not always live at a Distance from each other. The Time draws near when I am to be placed in a Convent, I must have a Person with me, and will contrive it so that you shall
be

be chosen, and then our Days and our Nights shall be passed together.

How sensible was I of this Mark of Tendernefs! Adieu the Project of my Journey to *Paris*, adieu the *Financier*. All the Thoughts of Fortune, that till then had amused me so agreeably, did not hold out one Moment against the flattering Hopes that my dear *Lucilia* gave me; and I quitted her, tasting in Idea all the Pleasures of that happy Time that she had given me a Prospect of.

For two Days my Mind was so filled with this charming Conversation, that I was far from wishing for the Return of the *Financier*; my Nurse perceived it, and asked me why I appeared so disgusted with my Journey to *Paris*. I told her frankly the Occasion of it. Upon which, like a Woman of good Sense, she represented to me, how much I was in the wrong to attach myself to *Lucilia* with such Excess; that I could not possibly conceal my Sex much longer, and that, in spite of my Precaution, my Features, my Voice, my Beard, all
would

would betray me ; and that, if I was so unhappy and so imprudent as to accompany the Daughter of the Baron to the Convent, I should inevitably ruin her Reputation, and plunge myself into the most dreadful Abyss. In fine, she said so many Things to me, to bring me to Reason, that tho' I could not cease to love *Lucilia*, yet I was sensible of the Necessity of parting from her.

The Arrival of the *Financier* finished the determining me to sacrifice my Love. He was charmed to find me still in the same Sentiments that he had left me. The Hostess, on her Side, was very glad to send me at a Distance from the Castle *du Mesnil* ; being persuaded, that if I remained in the Country, as soon as my Sex was made known, the scandalous Part of the World would not spare *Lucilia*, with whom I had been thus brought up in the Habit of a Girl. The *Financier*, therefore, had no Opposition to surmount for my Departure, which was fixed to be the next Morning before Day-break. I passed some Part of the Night in taking Measures with my Nurse in what manner we should hear

from each other. I afterwards put on my best Habit, and made a Bundle of all my Linnen. The Hour of my Departure at length being come, I embraced this good Woman, whom Gratitude had rendered so dear to me. We both wept excessively, feeling a sincere Sorrow at losing each other, perhaps for ever, and yet being resolved to part. The *Financier*, my Protector, after having again protested to the Hostess, that she might be easy upon my Account, (whom he only conveyed to *Paris*, he said, in order to place me in a Situation that might enable me to make the Remainder of my Mother's Life fortunate and happy) he took me into the Coach with him, and we left the Village without being seen by any Person in it.

I had no Reason to complain of his Behaviour on the Road; all his Discourse was reserved; there did not escape him any Action, or any Gesture, that I could draw the least ill Omen from. He seemed even to forbid his Eyes the Liberty of dwelling upon me. 'Tis true, indeed, I was but a Child;
but

but there are Men who won't refuse their Attention to a Female, tho' she had but just quitted her Leading-Strings; neither was my *Financier* so discreet as he appeared to be. As to the rest, he was a Man of a tollerable Figure, and not above five and thirty.

Upon our Entrance into *Paris*, I was surprized to see my Conductor stopped at a Barrier, by five or six sorry-looking Clerks, to whom he was obliged to give the Keys of a Valise, which was behind the Coach, and which, notwithstanding this, they did not presume to open when he had condescended to inform them of his Name and Quality. Tho' he had advertised me before that he should not carry me to his House, yet I could not help being embarrassed when I saw him send away his People and his Equipage, and take me with him in a wretched Hackney-Coach, whose shattered Aspect seem'd to promise me no Good. I fear'd lest his Intention should be to convey me to some Place; I don't say, that was dishonest, for I knew not then that there was any such, but to
some

some Place that would be disagreeable to me.

We alighted in the *Rue St. Honore*, at the Door of a House, of which he was the Proprietor, and in which there dwelt a Widow, who had formerly been Woman to his Mother, and whom his Father had hastily married to his Steward. That Domestick, to pay himself for his Complaisance, had taken such Care of his Perquisites, that at his Death his Widow, who was his second Wife, was left excessively rich. My Protector, to whom this good Lady was sometimes very serviceable, reposed an entire Confidence in her; he put me into her Hands, telling her, that I was an Orphan Daughter to one of his Tenants; and that perceiving I had a great Share of Sense, he designed to have me educated in a Convent, and to give me Masters there, in order to teach me every thing that was necessary for a young Woman to know. He charged her with the Care of chusing the Monastery, and promised her, that the next Day he would send her Money to equip me properly, and to buy

buy every Thing that would be necessary for me in the Convent.

After this he withdrew, and I remained with the Widow, who did not fail to sound me ; as she knew the *Financier* better than I did, she believed no more than she thought proper of what he had said to her, and asked me a thousand Questions, to judge by my Answers what she ought to think of me. The best was, that instead of confessing frankly in what manner, and upon what Footing I came to *Paris*, I disguised the Truth, to support what the *Financier* had said, as much as any Adventurer could have done who had acted in Concert with him.

The following Day he kept his Promise : He sent a Sum of Money, which most certainly was not all employed in equipping me, tho' he sent Word to the Widow that his Intention was, that I should have every Thing handsome, and that I should be introduced to the Religiouses as the Daughter of a Gentleman in the Provinces ; the Widow took care to gain about half for her Trouble of

VOL. I. N laying

laying out the rest. She immediately set her People to Work, and I was served with so much Expedition, that in about five or six Days I entered the Convent without seeing my Protector again, who doubtless was otherwise employed, or rather looked upon me as a Fruit which he must wait the ripening of.

I had imagined that the young Ladies, who were brought up in this House, would take a Pleasure in seeing and conversing with me, upon Account of my being a new Comer; but I was soon undeceived. Having learned that I was the Daughter of a Country Gentlemen not much known, they immediately neglected me, and I was reduced to the Company of those Religieuses who were charged with the Care of the Pensioners. I gave myself no great Uneasiness about it, and applying myself wholly to study the Lessons that were alternately given me by a Musick-Master and a Writing-Master, I made so surprizing a Progress in both these Sciences, that in less than six Months the whole Discourse of the Convent was upon my Writing, and my Taste for Musick. This by degrees engaged

gaged the elder Pensioners to humanize themselves towards me, and procured me an Entrance into their Apartments.

Are not you surprized, Gentlemen, at the Conduct of the *Financier* towards me? He had not yet made me a Visit since I had been in this House. But, in return, the Widow, his Agent, came to see me frequently, and our whole Conversation was of him. To hear her, he was the most honest, and the most generous Man that the King had in the Affairs of his Revenues. She asked me, from himself, if there was any thing that I wanted; and when he charged her with ten Pistoles for me, she delivered four of them very faithfully. On my Side, for a Novice, I did not play my Part ill with her. I had the Policy to complain, that my Protector did not add, to the other Favour heaped upon me, that of honouring me with a Visit. Have Patience, my dear, said the obliging Widow to me, upon that Head; he will soon be at the Grate to tell you himself, why he has till now deprived himself of that Pleasure.

In effect, he did not fail to do so; he appeared one Day in the Parlour, with the Widow of the Steward. He applauded me first upon the Facility with which I learned every thing that was taught me, and then he told me, that he perceived at the first Sight of me, that I should soon become a most accomplished Woman; and this it was, added he, which prevented my following the Design of putting you into the Service of a Lady. You seem to me rather to be born to be served, and Heaven will not permit you to be so displaced. No, my dear Child, it shall be your own Fault if you don't possess a shining Fortune. You must attach yourself to a Man of Fortune and Condition who loves you; in a word, to me. This good Friend, before whom I offer you my Heart, knows that I have only honourable Views upon you; if I had any other, I should not have conducted myself in this manner. Instead of letting your Virtue take Root in a House where you see only good Examples, I would have brought you up in the Pleasures of the World, I would have carried you continually to publick
Places,

Places, and never quitted you till I had triumphed over your Innocence.

You will imagine, Gentlemen, that the *Financier* did not stop here. He said a thousand other Things to prejudice me in his Favour; and afterwards wishing to know whether I had any Disposition to return the Sentiments he expressed to me, he asked me, with an Air of Tenderness, whether he might hope that I should have no Repugnance to unite my Destiny to his. I made answer, that I was too much penetrated with his Goodness to me, to be capable of paying it with Ingratitude. He appeared transported with Joy at these Words, and from thence took Occasion to press me to compleat his Happiness. After which, leaving me with his Agent, he withdrew, in order, he said, to prepare that Moment every Thing for the Celebration of our Marriage.

The Widow, as she had agreed upon with the Protector, wished me Joy upon the Importance of my Conquest, and upon the shining Figure that I should make in the World, when I was the happy

Partner of so rich a *Financier*, who not three Days before had refused for my Sake a Woman of Quality, who had been proposed to him. She afterwards advised me to sooth him in every Thing, and told me, as she was going, that on her Side she would use her utmost Efforts to engage him to terminate immediately an Affair of so much Importance to me. I saw plainly, after this Conversation, that I drew near the Conclusion of the Play, and that by Consequence I must, without Delay, think of some Expedient that might deliver me from the Embarrass I was in. For, in fine, I represented to myself, that if I had the Temerity to carry Things to the last Extremity, the Protector might revenge himself cruelly for the Deceit that I had put upon him.

To deliver myself from this Fear, which seemed but too well founded, I reflected Day and Night in what manner I could escape from the Convent; to this end I examined all the Windows and all the Walls of the House, but my Examination concluded only in making me lose all Hopes of escaping. I was in
this

this disagreeable Situation when we received a new Pensioner. She was a young Woman turn'd of Twenty, who would not have been received, but that her Mother was related to the Superior. In that House they would not accept of any of those young Persons, who have no other Vocation for a Retreat than the absolute Will of their Parents, and who often seclude them from the World only to place their staggering Virtue behind a Rampart of Bolts and Grates.

Our new Companion was named *Camilla*; I went into her Apartment as it was furnishing, and I entered into the Conversation she was in with two or three others of the Pensioners. I informed them of a Letter I had received, and by which I was told, that in four Days I should be taken from the Convent to be married. As I told them this News with a melancholly Look, they could not forbear saying to me with a Smile, that if they were in my Place, and received such a Letter, it would be no Affliction to them. *Camilla* made me several Questions upon my Departure; she asked me, if my Furniture was to be

N 4

fetched

fetch'd in a Cart, or by a Porter, and in what Street I was to live.

She had her Reasons for questioning me thus: My dear, said she to me one Evening, taking me by the Arm as we came from Prayers, I have something of the greatest Consequence to communicate to you. Don't fall asleep so soon as usual, that you may open your Door to me, or rather don't shut it. I was in no Danger of falling asleep, nor even of going to Bed. I was too much in Pain to know what she had to say to me, and tormenting my Head to divine it, Does she design, said I, to charge me with some Letter of Gallantry, or has not she some Suspicion of my Sex? These gay Creatures that know the World have Eyes much more penetrating than the good Religieuses. *Camilla* surprized me as I was in this last Thought, and embraced me with a Transport, which I imagined too violent to be bestowed upon one of the same Sex.

My Repose and the Happiness of my Life are in your Hands, said she to me: I must quit this House, which is to me
the

the dreadfullest of Captivities, I shall perhaps never find so favourable an Opportunity as you may procure me, if you are as much disposed to do me a Pleasure as I should be to oblige you in the same Conjunction. I promised her to do any thing for her that depended upon me; and upon that, having desired me to listen to her with Attention, she resumed her Discourse in the following manner :

You cannot be ignorant how disagreeable it is to a young Person, to have a Mother who imagines herself still handsome, who endeavours to pass for young, and is, in short, a compleat Coquette. This is a Misfortune that I have felt in all its Circumstances. You saw this young and handsome Mother the Day that she came to deliver me up to the Superior, to free herself from a disagreeable Rival ; if you observed her, you must confess that she is much in the wrong to pretend to be agreeable. Could you think, that at her Age, and with her mean Look, she could imagine that she has Reason to complain when she has not three or four Adorers at her Toilet ? and would you

believe that she never wants idle People who are willing to act that foolish Part? This is because, since the Death of my Father, she enjoys a large Revenue, which she employs in entertaining them. She keeps an elegant Table, and plays high; is it possible then that she can ever want the Men?

During three or four Years, pursued she, whilst this beauteous Mamma feared me less than she did her Woman, whose Place I supplied at her Toilet, I was ashamed to hear the stupid Things that were said to her by those Adorers of the Charms of her Table. How many wretched Compliments did they make her swallow like Nectar and Ambrosia! Self-Love must render a Coquet senseless, or she would be conscious of the Affront of such gross, ill-placed Flattery. If any of these Gentlemen, who had a better Taste or less Dissimulation than the rest, attempted to address the least obliging Speech to me, I was a Week before I appeared again at Table; my Mother banished me from her Sight by the Title of a little Girl; she would willingly have whipped me before
the

the whole World, the better to perswade them that I was but a Child.

As soon as I perceived the Cause of this Ill-treatment that I received from her, I resolved, in order to revenge myself, to take upon my Account the Affiduities of some young People, whose Eyes explained themselves to mine with great Energy. I made them remark that I understood them, by applauding them with a Smile, when they seasoned with some ironical Gesture the Praises they lavished upon my Mother, or when they hinted to me, by some Sign, that the gallant Things they said to her were addressed to me.

A young Count, extremely handsome, declared to me by several Letters equally passionate and sprightly, that I had inspired him with a violent Love. I yielded to the Pleasure of believing him sincere, and the Pride of taking him from a jealous Mother. As soon as our Intelligence was formed, the Count, to render it more secret, affected to appear more assiduous to my Rival than he had ever been before. She was
so

so charmed with it, that fixing her whole Attention upon him alone, she chose him for the Depository of her Secrets. About a Month ago, she made him a Confidante of the Design she had to put me in a Convent, since I refused an Offer that was too good for me. This Offer was an old Fool of a Relation, whom I detested. She repeated to me incessantly, that he loved me to Distraction, and that he demanded nothing with me ; as if I had given nothing to an old Wretch, when I had sacrificed my Youth and Beauty to him.

If the Count was stunn'd with the Project that my Mother had formed of shutting me up in a Monastery, what became of him when she added, that to prove the Esteem and Affection she had conceived for him, she had resolved to offer him her Hand, with those Advantages that would render his Fate worthy of Envy ? In the Confusion that this Discourse threw him into, he was very near discovering his Sentiments ; however, he had the Strength to constrain himself, and meeting me by accident alone, he whispered to me : Every
thing

thing is disposing for a double Marriage to be celebrated speedily, I to your Mother, and you to a Convent.

In effect, two Days after I was brought to this House. The Count, who cannot now be ignorant of it, is doubtless in Despair. He is passionate, he has been with my Mother, and I doubt not in the least, but he has spoke to her in very unreserved Terms. All this must fall upon me. She came this Morning with a furious Air to the Convent, to give her Orders that I should not be suffered to see any Body that came. This Command, which cuts off all Communication between the Count and me, prevents us from taking Measures for our meeting again. I am satisfied that he resolves to carry me off; but I know not by what Methods he can pretend to succeed in it. On my Side, I also exercise my Imagination upon the same Subject; and if I do not deceive myself, you may assist me to leave this Place without Disturbance.

I promised *Camilla* to contribute to her Evasion, provided she would give me

me her Word that in return she would lend me her Assistance to free me from the Hands of those who were to fetch me from the Convent. I only made a Mystery of my Sex, not thinking it proper then to discover it to her. She appeared transported to find me in the same Disposition with herself. Well then, said I to her, let me know what Service you expect from me. I have imagined, replied she, that the Day of your leaving this House may become the last of my Slavery. You see this Nich, added she, pointing to a small Mahogany Chest, which amongst other little Effects had been bought to furnish my Chamber, I will shut myself up in it the Day that you remove, you shall let me be carried to the Place where you are to be conducted, and from thence I will escape to the Count.

I applauded this marvellous Invention, not being of an Age to remark the Extravagance of it, and we agreed to attempt the Adventure. This Stratagem however was not made use of, and my Affairs in a Moment changed their Appearance. My Widow came
the

the next Day to see me, and appeared in such Emotion, that I easily judged she had something extraordinary to inform me of. I was not mistaken in my Conjecture: My dear Child, said she to me, what I have to declare to you will surprize you extremely. Your Protector was arrested Yesterday in the Evening in the King's Name, and conveyed to the *Bastile*. I know not what Crime he is guilty of; but it is said he is a lost Man. However that may be, I come to assure you that I will not abandon you. I will be a Mother to you, and give you continual Marks of the Friendship I have for you. I shall come To-morrow to pay your Pension, and to fetch you from hence, and carry you home with me, where we may live peaceably together, till we see whether your Protector can retrieve his Affairs, as it is possible he may do, notwithstanding what is said.

This News gave me a secret Joy. I was transported to find myself disembarassed for ever from my *Financier*, and being perswaded that I could escape when I pleased from the Widow, I accepted

cepted the Asylum which she presented to me so very generously, as I imagined. Before she came to fetch me, I had another Conversation with *Camilla*, whom I informed of the Change that had happened in my Affairs, by the happy Misfortune of the *Financier*. She made me her Compliments upon it, and told me, that on her Side she had received a Letter from the Count ; he got it conveyed to me, added she, by a Servant whom he gained, and who alone has the Permission of speaking to me from my Mother. He sends me Word that he has formed a Project for my Escape, which he shall communicate to me shortly, and the Success of which he assures me is infallible.

I testified to *Camilla*, in my Turn, the Share I took in the Hopes that her Lover gave her of snatching her soon from a Retreat that was so displeasing to her. After which, having embraced each other several times, we parted, each taken up with her own little Affairs. At length the Widow came according to her Promise to pay my Pension, and fetch away my small Effects,
and

and having taken me with her into a *Carose de Kernise*, she carried me to her House, where I supp'd with a well-dress'd elderly Man. There was also at Table a young Lady who boarded with the Widow, and for whom the old Man seemed to express great Affection. He had an Air of Gallantry and good Breeding, which notwithstanding his Age rendered him passable. Between Eleven and Twelve he withdrew. When he was retired, the Widow said to me, My dear Child, I share my Bed with my Boarder. I desire you for this Night only to lye with *Marianne*; To-morrow I will have the Bed put up for you that you had in the Convent.

Marianne was a Chamber-maid, whom the Widow had lately taken into her Service, with a modest Behaviour, a prudent and reserved Air; she had Youth and Wit, and did not want for Beauty. We passed a Part of the Night in conversing about the Convent I had been in. Whilst I related to her the innocent Manner in which I lived there, she sigh'd several times, and told me, it would have been happy for me if I had been there still.

still. She repeated this so often to me, that I had the Curiosity at last to ask her the Reason of it, not comprehending why she pity'd me for being in the World. It is, replied she, because you will be employed here very differently. If I durst tell you all that I think there-upon, you would see it is not without Cause that I deplore your Fate. For Heaven's Sake speak more clearly to me, said I to her, you terrify me.

Promise me then, replied she, that you will keep my Secret, and I will conceal nothing from you. I protested to her that she might depend upon my Discretion. Well then, said she, know that you are here in a House where your Innocence runs the greatest of Hazards, out of Compassion I am willing to advertise you of it. The Lady whom you have seen is the Mistress of the old *Maltotier* *, with whom you supp'd. He comes to see her almost every Night, and Madam shares with her in the Profits of her Gallantry. Don't imagine that you was taken out of the Convent
with

* *Maltotier* is one who farms the Taxes, or other Parts of the Revenue.

with any other View than that of procuring you some other rich Gallant in the Place of the *Financier*, who has been put into the *Bastile*, and who was upon the Point of deceiving you by a false Marriage. I have been informed of all this by the Cook, who loves me. I am searching out privately for another Service, not being of a Humour to be in the least pleased with this.

I returned my Thanks to *Marianne* for having instructed me in all these Particularities, and out of Gratitude I discovered my Sex to her. This Confidence gave her Pleasure, and seeing me free from the Danger she had dreaded for me, willingly lent her Assistance to the Design I had of changing my Petticoats into Breeches. I have, said she to me, a Brother who is a Broker, Tomorrow early I will go and instruct him. I will return immediately here to take you, and I will conduct you to him, where I will leave you. I desire no more of you, replied I; as soon as I am at your Brother's I shall think myself at the Height of all my Wishes. A
Broker

Broker, at this instant, is the most necessary Man upon Earth to me.

The next Morning, in short, *Marianne* went out at the Break of Day, and after having explained the Mystery to her Brother, came to me again in a Hackney-Coach, which she ordered to stop at the Widow's Door. During that Time I made a Packet of my Cloaths and my Linnen, which *Marianne* and I taking with us in the Coach, we drove to the House of the Broker, where I was soon metamorphos'd into a Boy. All my female Equipage, some Part of which was magnificent, were sold upon the Spot, and with the Money that arose from them I was very handsomly equipped as a Man from Head to Foot. How pleased was I with myself, in this long-wish'd-for Form! A new Knight of *Maltha* is not more vain of his Cross, nor a new Bishop of his Mitre, than I was of my Breeches. At length I departed from the Broker's, who having himself hired me ready-furnish'd Lodgings, conducted me to them, and recommended me strongly to the Host.

Behold

Behold me now at sixteen, abandoned to my own Conduct, and possessing, for my whole Estate, a compleat Suit, with a few Shirts, and about twenty Pistoles, which I had received from the *Financier* during my Residence in the Convent. My Host informed me of a Tavern, where, without being at much Expence, I might eat tollerably well. I went there constantly to Dinner and Supper, and I observed that nobody came there that was not very well dressed. Young People very easily make Acquaintances; amongst the rest I got an Intimacy with a Cavalier of an agreeable Figure, older than myself by several Years, and the Devil of a *Petit Maitre*, which was exactly to my Taste. He was called Monsieur the Marquis, and was in reality a Man of Condition.

In the mean Time, by living at the Tavern, and wandering about in *Paris*, my Finances sunk visibly, and representing to myself almost every Hour the Embarrass I should be in when I had exhausted my last Pistole, I appeared sometimes so melancholly and thoughtful, that the Marquis perceived it, and
asked

asked me the Occasion of it. I did not conceal it from him, and I confessed to him that I should have great Obligations to any Man who would procure me a good Place in an Office. I can do your Business, said the Marquis to me ; I know a *Partisan** to whom I will speak of you, and I am certain that, out of Consideration for me, he will do you Service.

The Marquis did not boast of an Interest which he had not ; he writ in my Favour to one who wished to be thought of his Family, and who was interested in three or four different Companies, and the Word of my dear Cousin, repeated in three or four Places of the Letter, did Wonders. As I was the Bearer of the Note, the *Partisan* received me graciously, contrary to the Custom of those Gentlemen, who give their Clerks a very magisterial Reception, and he had no sooner seen my Writing than he appointed me to be under him, telling me, that he would form my Hand and my Mind himself.

He

* *Partisan* is the same as *Maltotier*.

He entered me immediately into the common Affairs, so that in about six Months he trusted the Care of them wholly to me. In regard to what he called the King's Affairs he was more reserved. These were Secrets to all but those interested in them. Sometimes when I came home I brought him Compliments from his Cousin the Marquis, tho' I had not seen him, he having ceased to keep up a Commerce with me. This put him into so good a Humour, that he run out into Discourses without End. In these Overflowings of his Heart he used to initiate me into the secret Mysteries of his Profession. By his Account an Affair was not extraordinary when it brought in only *Cent. per Cent.*

If I had been less useful to him he might have placed me where I might have made my Fortune; but unfortunately for me, he had accustomed himself to meddle only with great Affairs, and abandoned the small ones to my Care. How many Posts did I see him give to People he scarce knew; he was so obliging, that he did a Service to
whoever

whoever was presented to him, and so disinterested, that he declared he would neither receive Money nor Presents from any Person, saying, that he was well satisfied with being able to do his Duty. His Lady, indeed, interpreted this Duty in her own Manner, and made a proper Use of every thing ; according to the Places where the Clerks were sent, whom her Husband procured Employments for, she desired them to perform Commissions for her, which produced Plenty and Abundance in her Family, and the poor Commissioners, out of Gratitude and out of Timidity, never presumed to speak of what they had laid out.

As soon as she knew the Place where these young Bloodsuckers went to learn their Trade of oppressing the People, she immediately informed herself of the Commerce of the Place, and what the Ground or the Industry of the Inhabitants produced ; Wine, Cyder, Sweetmeats, Game, Butter, and Cheefes of all Sorts were shower'd into the House continually. But the Ignorance of a new-made Clerk disordered all this Manage-

nagement of the Lady's. A young Man had obtained a Post at *St. Valery*, in *Picardy*; the Patroness knew that not far from thence they made very celebrated dry Biscuits, which were known by the Name of Biscuits of *Abbeville*, she writ immediately to the young Man, to desire him to send her a Box of them, telling him, that her Husband loved them excessively, and designed to make some Presents of them. You will let me know the Price, added she, in her Letter, that it may be returned you immediately.

The too punctual Clerk sent the Biscuits, and let her know that the Price was ten Pistoles, which he would pay the Dealer as soon as he had received the Money from her, either by a Bill of Exchange, or as she thought proper. This Answer displeas'd the Lady, who termed it Stupidity and Ingratitude, and to teach this Novice what the Pigmies of the Finances owe to those interested in the Affairs of the King, she got him immediately recalled, and his Place was given to another. This unfortunate Clerk, who had only had a View of the

Land of Plenty from the Mountain, not having had Time to repair his Fault, could not pay the Biscuit-Maker; but he deliver'd him the Letter by which he had been commission'd to buy them, and instructed him of the Name and Habitation of the *Maltotier* at *Paris*. The Biscuit-Maker departs for that City, addresses himself directly to the *Partisan*, and demands the Payment of his Biscuits. The *Financier* sets him at Defiance, and even calls him a Rogue. What does the Dealer? He proves the sending of the Box addressed to the *Partisan*, and its being received in his Name. In fine, he makes so many Enquiries, that he discovers the very Shop where ten Pistoles were paid down to the *Maltotier's* Lady for the individual Biscuits.

This was the Rock upon which struck that Reputation of Generosity which the *Financier* had acquired, and the malicious World believed him an Accomplice in the Behaviour of his Wife. What was still more vexatious for him was, that instead of paying the Dealer to avoid all Disturbance, he let himself be sued for it, and gave all *Paris* an Amusement

ment at his Expence ; for he could not appear in the Streets, without hearing the Boys call after him *Biscuits of Abbeville.*

He bought at that Time * a Country House near *Paris*, where he resided almost continually, with his Wife and his Daughter, as if they had been afraid to shew themselves in that City since the History of the Biscuits. During his Absence I was charged with the Care of his Affairs, and he had an entire Confidence in me. On my Side, being more frequently in a Fencing-School or the public Walks than in my Office, I was obliged to lay the Burthen upon my Deputy Clerk ; a Clerk, who indeed began to enter into some of the Functions of one, but without ceasing to serve us at Table, and to exercise at Leisure Hours the Post of a Footman, till another should come to relieve him. How many rich *Financiers* have made their first Essay in the same manner!

We went, my Companion and myself, every *Saturday* Evening into the

O 3

Coun-

Country, and returned early on *Monday Morning*. We passed all the Holidays thus, not to set on the Pot in two Places without Necessity. We were always well received, because there was no Amusement nor Gaiety in the House but when we were there. As they did not stand upon Forms in the Country, the Chamber-Maid and the Footman-Clerk eat with us at the Master's Table. This by degrees render'd him less timid, or rather more enterprizing; another in his Place would have been satisfied with the Cook, or at most only raised his Thoughts to the Chamber-Maid; but he, more ambitious, formed a Design of being the Favourite of the Daughter of his Master, and acquired a legitimate Right of enriching himself at the Expence of the Publick, by being allied to the Blood of an opulent *Maltotier*.

His Conquest indeed would have been more glorious if he had had any Rivals to dispute it with, and that the Place he had endeavoured to attack had been more strongly fortified. The *Financier* and his Spouse, incapable of any other Care than that of enriching themselves,
or .

or else perswaded that when a Woman will not guard herself, it would be in vain, like *Aerifius*, to be at the Expence of a Tower of Brass, lest their Daughter a despotick Power over her own Charms. 'Tis true, she had so small a Share of them, that it seemed only necessary for her to shew herself, and her Person must have disgusted the most eager Gallant. As to me, I thought her so redoubtable, that I could only have a very barren Gratitude for a thousand tender Kindnesses that she expressed for me. When I was at the Expence of saying some complaisant Thing to her, which very seldom happen'd to me, I got away from her immediately, that she might not perceive the Violence I had done myself in it.

She made so many useless Advances to please me, that at length she was tired of attempting it; and taking up with the serviceable Clerk, who shewed her his Passion plainly, by his Looks, she opposed no Cloud to the Embraces of this new *Ixion*. Whilst he, less delicate than me, possessed in Tranquility the Favours I had disdained, Chance en-

O 3 gaged

gaged me in an Adventure very proper to teach a Scholar in Gallantry the first Elements of Libertinism.

I had contrived one Evening to disguise myself in a *Spanish* Dress to go to a Masquerade. This Dress suited extremely well to the Fineness of my Shape, and I was so perswaded that I might pass for a very pretty Fellow, that I affected not to put on my Masque till I was in the Ball-Room. As soon as I appeared there, some Ladies began to make Advances to me, I return'd them, and for a Novice in the World, I did not play my Part ill; my first Essay was a Master-piece, I forced one of the most splendid Masques in the Assembly to sacrifice to the *Spanish* Idol. This was a Lady dressed like an *Amazon*, and who had the Air of a Princess; she fixed her Eyes upon me directly, and as she passed by me pressed my Hand. I judged that, but for some *Argus* that accompanied her, she would not perhaps have stopped there, and I resolved to follow her without Reserve. She perceived it, and I thought I remarked that she had an eager Desire to speak to
me,

me, and I was not mistaken. Whilst a Man who accompanied her was gone to fetch some Oranges and Biscuits, she approached me hastily, and told me without any other Introduction, that if I was discreet and capable of an Attachment, I need only tell her my Name, and my *Adresse*, which I did not fail to do with great Eagerness. At the same Time I would have kissed her Hand, which she held out to me ; but she drew it back hastily, fearing, I presume, that her jealous Guardian might see that Action, and in a Moment after she disappeared from the Ball-room.

It is impossible to imagine with what Impatience, and with what Agitation I passed the two following Days. I durst not go out for fear of not being at home at the Arrival of the *Mercury* of my Goddess. I staid in my Office till it was Play-time. Then I went to the Play, or to the Opera, in hopes of meeting there with the Person that I sought for, as if I should know her again when I had only seen her in a Masque. I examined all the Ladies who appeared in the Boxes, and I imagined sometimes

O 4

that

that amongst the Marchionesses, and the Dutcheesses, I had found out the Nymph who had seized upon my Heart. I hoped at least that by shewing myself upon the Stage I should make her remark me, and oblige her to deliver me from my Inquietude. However, notwithstanding the good Opinion I had of my own Merit, I could not help thinking sometimes that my Amazon, very different from that of *Alexander*, perhaps only designed to make a Ridicule of the *Spaniard*, by forcing him to fight for a Shadow.

I had been six Days in this violent Situation, when a good old Woman, as early a Riser, though not so beautiful, as the Goddess *Aurora*, had me awakened to inform me that I must follow her where she had Orders to conduct me. I desired the old Woman to give me Time to dress myself, and when that was done, behold us both that Instant in the Street. I would have asked her some Questions relating to her Mistress : Say nothing to me, Monsieur, said she, and suffer me to go before you. I obeyed, for fear of losing, perhaps

haps by my Indiscretion, a shining Fortune. By the Way, attentive to every Step of my Conductress, every time that I saw her near a large Hôtel, I imagined she was going to enter there, and I was constantly mistaken. She stopped before a House, which not agreeing with the Idea I had formed of my Amazon, did not appear to me proper to be her Residence. I rather chose to believe, that it was a House hired to receive me more secretly. It was nevertheless there that she usually inhabited, and the Magnificence that reigned within, soon made me forget the mean Appearance it had without.

I crossed through three or four Antichambers of an Apartment magnificently furnished; from whence I passed into one where the Cloth was still layed, and a Confusion of Bottles and Glasses made me judge that the Night had been passed at Table. From thence I was introduced into a Cabinet, where I entered trembling; but my Embarrass was sufficiently justified by the Novelty of my acting the Part of a Favourite of the Lady's. My Princess judging, by

O 5

my

my timid and confused Look, that I stood in need of being taught to know the World, was so good as to be willing herself to take the Trouble of putting the finishing Stroke to my Education. At our parting we agreed upon the Day when we should meet again, and she made me, in spite of myself, accept of the first Toy that she laid her Hand upon, amongst a hundred that were upon her Toilette ; it was a very handsome Gold Snuff-box.

I became generous in my Turn, I gave two Crowns to the old Woman who had conducted me thither ; and for my Money I learned from her, that her Mistress, to whom I had not dared to express the least Curiosity, had been an Actress ; that after having shined for some Time upon the Stage, she had retired, and very prudently satisfied herself with ruining a rich Dupe who loaded her with Presents ; that this Gallant had passed the Night with her, with two of his Friends, and that they had been obliged to carry them all three from the Table to their Coaches.

I was

I was obliged to sink a little from the high Ideas I had conceived of my Heroine. I might indeed, by the Manner only in which she had sketched out this Intrigue, have guess'd rightly at her Condition; but there are so many Women of Distinction, who outdo even these Princesses in a Debauch, that the Thing was very equivocal. If I lost on the Side of Honour, I was well made amends for it by the Pleasure of being beloved by a Woman extremely amiable, and in high vogue. Besides this, she sacrificed to me an illustrious Rival, a high and mighty Lord, with whom I was not a little proud of contracting such a Consanguinity.

The Day that we had chose for our second Interview, passed very agreeably. I returned to my Office with a Gold Repeating Watch, which I again could not excuse myself from accepting. It was the same in all the other Visits that I made to this generous Coquet. She always forced me to receive some Present from her, and among the rest a Ring, valued at a thousand Crowns, which

which ten or twelve Years after I gave my Wife as a Marriage Present.

* In a Commerce of four or five Months, carried on in this *Peru*, I increased my Finances so much, that I began to think I did my *Maltotier* a great deal of Honour in condescending to stay with him. Though almost all his Business passed through my Hands, he could not suspect me of having enriched myself in his House, since, properly speaking, I had the Direction of nothing but the Paper and the Ink-bottle; it was however from this House, I thought I could neither expect good nor harm, that the Storm rose which overturned my rising Fortune, and like a Whirlwind transported me into a Foreign Land, as I am going to relate to you.

The Intrigue of the officious Clerk, my Deputy Brother, with the Daughter of his Master, though conducted very secretly, became every Day more difficult to be concealed, and you will easily imagine why. The Shape of the dear
Creature

Creature increased visibly. The Mother perceived it, and advertised her Husband. They both held a Counsel there-upon, and sliding one Night into the Chamber of their Daughter, whilst she slept, they discovered what they sought for. Poor, and miserable *Calisto*, what a Confusion for thee to see thy guilty Plumpness exposed, not to the Eyes of the scrupulous Nymphs, but to those of an incensed Father and a furious Mother !

Upon the making this Discovery, the Father raised his Voice, and addressed these Words to his Daughter in so high a Tone, that I heard them distinctly in my Chamber, which was only separated from that where this Scene passed by a single Partition. Wretch that thou art, wilt thou then ruin us entirely ? Was not the unhappy Affair of *Abbeville* enough ? Must we again have the Vexation of giving the World a fresh Occasion to laugh at our Expence ? These Words were followed by a Shower of Blows, which the Mother poured upon the Delinquent, who finding herself awakened thus disagreeably, cried out most dreadfully.

fully. The *Financier*, more pacifick than his Wife, prevented her from continuing to abuse her Daughter, and demanded by whom she had had the Weakness to let herself be seduced. She hesitated some time before she answered, notwithstanding the Menaces they gave her if she did not speak; but whether she was afraid that the Meanness of her Inclination would draw upon her the Chastisement that they threatned, or that she was not sorry to have an Opportunity of revenging herself for the Contempt with which I had repaid a thousand Advances she had made me, and that she imagined they would oblige me to marry her, she had the Insolence to declare that it was I who had triumphed over her Virtue.

However astonished I was at the Impudence of this Accusation, I listened very attentively to the Remainder of a Scene which began to be very interesting to me. I did not lose one Word of it. The Husband and the Wife were very liberal to me in Epithets that shewed their Resentment. They were only embarrassed as to what kind of
Ven-

Vengeance they should fix upon : The Wife talked of nothing but knocking out my Brains, and cudgelling me to Death ; but the *Maltotier*, less hasty and more political, was of Opinion, that to deliver themselves from such a Monster as their Daughter, it was proper to force me to marry her, and then abandon us both to our evil Destiny. If he pretends, added he, to make the least Resistance to our Commands, he shall rot in a Dungeon.

The Hopes that the Accusatrix had, that I should prefer the Possession of her, whatever Reasons I had to be dissatisfied with it, before a perpetual Prison, consoled her for the Blows that she had received. She told me the next Day, with an Air of Insolence, that it was by my own Fault that she had been reduced to the vexatious Necessity of employing a third Person to do me a Service in spite of myself ; that her Parents would never have consented to marry us but for this happy Fault, which an Excess of Love for me had made her guilty of. This might be true, and yet such was my Ingratitude, that, without
think-

thinking myself obliged to her for her Favours, I very unpolitely took the Liberty of thrusting her by the Shoulders out of my Office, where she had the Assurance to come, and inform me of the Resolution her Father had taken, to unite our Destinies.

The Moment after I had this Conversation with her, I saw the *Maltotier* appear, who addrested a long Discourse to me, which he had prepared to exaggerate the Goodness of his giving up his Daughter to an Adventurer, instead of putting him in the Hands of Justice, to have him punished as a Suborner of the Daughter of his Master. I answered him very coldly, that he was mistaken in me ; that if his Daughter had made a false Step, I had not been the Occasion of it ; that I thought her more proper to extinguish any loose Desires than to create them ; and, in a word, that not having been her Gallant, I would never be her Husband.

The disdainful Air with which I pronounced these Words piqued the *Maltotier*, who, doing Violence to himself to conceal

conceal the Fury that transported him, said to me as he left me: My little Monsieur, make your Reflections upon what has been said, and don't force me to convince you that I have still Credit enough left to humble your Pride: I gave him an Answer, but he did not hear it, that my Resolution was already fixed, and that, very different from those idle Fellows who loved to find their Work done to their Hands, I should make a Conscience of enjoying the Fruits of my Neighbour's Labour.

The next Day the *Financier* asked me, what was my Resolution upon that which he had proposed to me. I told him, that I could not take any other than that of desiring him to provide himself with a new Clerk, and to examine my Books. This then, replied he, is the Conclusion of your Reflections. I am sorry for you. As he finished these Words he quitted me to go and employ his utmost Power against me, and to revenge himself for a Refusal, the Justice of which he was not sensible of.

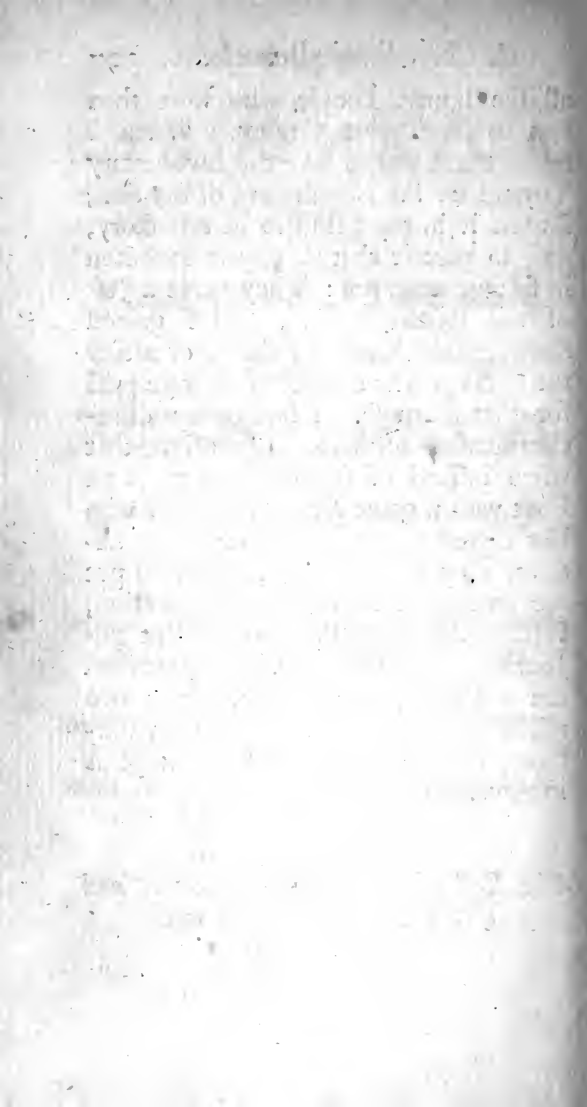
His

His Endeavours were not fruitless : I was arrested two Days after in the Street by a Troop of Archers, who seized upon me in a Moment. It was in vain to tell them I had no design to make the least Resistance, they shook and tofs'd me the more, as every Shake made something fall into their Hands, either my Snuff-box, my Watch, or my Money. They afterwards put me into a Hackney Coach, and conveyed me to the Chatelet. Before I arrived there, I took notice that I had still my Ring upon my Finger ; happily for me my Guards had not perceived it ; to preserve it from the Talons of these Birds of Prey, who are licensed Robbers, I contrived with my Teeth to loosen it out of the Collet, and I kept it in my Mouth.

Doubtless, what had determined the *Maltotier* to lodge me so speedily in the Chatelet, was, that he had heard there was a large Convoy to depart immediately for *Canada*. In effect, I had not the Chagrin of laying upon Straw ; for that very Night I was taken out of Prison to be transported to *Quebec*, with
all

all the honest People who were then sent to stock that Colony. When I found that I was to take this involuntary Voyage for the Punishment of my Sins, I took it in my Head to be refractory, and to protest that they were mistaken in seizing upon me : They made a Jest of my Remonstrances, and I gained nothing but Blows by them, or rather the Officers who conducted us were paid for that Purpose. I had been well recommended to them. I perceived that when instead of suffering me to go on Foot with a great Number of those who like myself were going by force into *Canada*, they did me the Honour to put me amongst the People of Distinction, I mean amongst those who went this Journey in an Equipage. They granted me a Place in a Waggon, where two redoubtable Archers, armed with Car-bines, occupied each End, and kept us in Awe.

*The End of the THIRD BOOK, and
of the FIRST VOLUME.*



THE
ADVENTURES
OF
ROBERT CHEVALIER,
CALL'D
De BEAUCHENE,
CAPTAIN of a PRIVATEER in
NEW-FRANCE.

By Monsieur LE SAGE,
Author of GIL-BLAS.

V O L. II.

L O N D O N :

Printed and Sold by T. GARDNER, at Cowley's-
Head, opposite St. Clement's Church in the
Strand; and R. DODSLEY, in Pall-Mall.

M, DCC, XLV.

THE
ADVENTURES

OF

ROBERT CHEVALIER

ESQ.

DE BERNICHE

CAPTAIN OF A REGIMENT IN

THE ARMY

BY THE AUTHOR

OF THE HISTORY OF THE

REVOLUTION

LONDON

Printed by J. B. G. at the
Office of the Revue, in the
Rue de la Harpe, No. 111.

1793.



CONTENTS

OF THE

SECOND VOLUME.

BOOK IV.

In what Manner Monneville is convey'd from Paris to Rochelle, where he embarks for Quebec. What passes on board the Vessel in its Voyage. In what Manner the Marriages are made between the Women and the young Men, who are sent from France to People the Colony. By what Address Monneville and a young Woman of Paris avoid that wretched Fate. He obtains an Employment by the Credit of a Father Recolet, who does him still further Services. In what Manner Mademoiselle du Clos and he lived in the Fort, and in the Habitation of the Commander. They part in a friendly Manner. How she became Sakgame,

C O N T E N T S.

or Sovereign of a Canton of the Hurons. A Description of her Habitation. The Manners and Customs of those Savages, and what Reception they gave to Monneville. The History of M^{lle} Demoiselle du Clos. The Commandant dies. Monneville demands to succeed him in his Post. The Governor refuses him with Politeness, and names Monsieur de la Haye, a young Parisian, to fill the Place of Commandant of the Fort; but, in Return, Monneville inherits the Habitation and Moveables of the Deceased. He conducts Monsieur and Madame de la Haye to the Fort, and becomes their most intimate Friend. Unfortunately Love is introduced into the Party, and spoils all. The History of Monsieur and Madame de la Haye. A strange Event, which ought to serve as a Warning to the Reader, to be upon his Guard against the Surprizes of Love.

B O O K V.

Monneville returns into France. He goes to Paris, where he falls into an
Inli-

C O N T E N T S.

Intimacy with several young Debauchees, amongst whom, by Accident, he meets with the Chevalier, Brother to Mademoiselle du Clos. He makes an Acquaintance with that young Man, and gives him News of his Sister. They become the best Friends in the World. Monneville leaves him to take a Journey to Mesnil, where he was brought up in his Infancy, in order to see his Nurse, and endeavour to draw from her some Light concerning her Birth. He buys the Estate of the Count de Monneville, his Father. He goes to the Castle of Mesnil, where he sees the Baronness and Lucilia, and after several Conversations with these Ladies, there is a mutual Discovery made. The Baronness informs him that he is her Son. He marries Lucilia. The Chevalier comes to his Nuptials, which are no sooner celebrated, than those two Gentlemen prepare for their Departure to Canada, in order to find out Mademoiselle du Clos. They arrive at Quebec, and go to Montreal; where, after a thousand Enquiries and Researches, they learn that the Sakgame of the Hurons has lost her Life,

C O N T E N T S.

to the great Regret of those faithful Savages. At length, Monneville and his Friend having re-embarked to return into France, are attacked and taken by the English, who carry them to Boston, in New-England. There they are sold as Slaves to a Captain, who buys them to sell again; but Beauchene and his Companions meet the Vessel of that Officer, make themselves Masters of it, and by that Monneville and the Chevalier are delivered from Slavery.

B O O K VI.

He meets two English Vessels appointed to guard the Coasts, who take him Prisoner. To recover his Liberty he forms a Project, which fails of Success. He is put ashore with his Companions at the Foot of a Rock in the Desarts of Guinea, where they are left without Provisions, and without Arms. After running through a thousand Dangers, Beauchene, with two of his Companions, arrives at Cape Coast, where he falls again into the Hands of the Captain who took him before. He is
shot

C O N T E N T S.

Shut up in a Dungeon, and afterwards set at Liberty. He is conveyed to Judda, where he is kindly received by Monsieur de Chamois, Governor of the French Fort, who engages him in an Attempt to ravage the Princes-Island. A Detail of that Expedition. Several Descents made by Beauchene upon the Coasts of Brasil. The Seizure of a Captain of one of the Guarda Coastas. A Price set upon the Head of the Chevalier de Beauchene by the Governor of Rio Janeiro. He takes a considerable Prize. The Valour of the Portuguese. He, accompanied by several other Privateers, join the Troops commanded by Monsieur Cassart. They go to ravage Montserrat. The Consequences of that Expedition.





THE
ADVENTURES
OF THE
Chevalier de Beauchene.

The Continuation of the History
of the Count DE MONNEVILLE.

BOOK IV.

*In what Manner Monneville is convey'd
from Paris to Rochelle, where he em-
barks for Quebec. What passes on
board the Vessel in its Voyage. In what
Manner the Marriages are made be-
tween the Women and the young Men,
who are sent from France to People*

VOL. II. B the

The Adventures of the Colony. By what Address Monneville and a young Woman of Paris avoid that wretched Fate. He obtains an Employment by the Credit of a Father Recolet, who does him still further Services. In what Manner Mademoiselle du Clos and he lived in the Fort, and in the Habitation of the Commander. They part in a friendly Manner. How she became Sakgame, or Sovereign of a Canton of the Hurons. A Description of her Habitation. The Manners and Customs of those Savages, and what Reception they gave to Monneville. The History of Mademoiselle du Clos. The Commandant dies. Monneville demands to succeed him in his Post. The Governor refuses him with Politeness, and names Monsieur de la Haye, a young Parisian, to fill the Place of Commandant of the Fort; but, in Return, Monneville inherits the Habitation and Moveables of the Deceased. He conducts Monsieur and Madame de la Haye to the Fort, and becomes their most intimate Friend. Unfortunately Love is introduced into the Party, and spoils all. The History of Monsieur and

the Chevalier de Beauchene. 3

and Madame de la Haye. A strange Event, which ought to serve as a Warning to the Reader, to be upon his Guard against the Surprizes of Love.



UR Caravan made a Halt at *Bourg la Reine*, to put themselves into a proper marching Order. The Sun, which then began to rise,

shewed me that I had for Associates two or three hundred Sharpers and Ladies of Pleasure, who were sent to reinforce the Colony of *New-France*. As we all went the Voyage with Regret, there reigned at first a general Sorrow among us; some cursing the Persons to whom they imputed their Misfortunes, and making the Air resound with their Cries and Lamentations; others, representing to themselves the Usefulness of Complaints, swallowed their Vexations in profound Silence; but insensibly, and by Degrees, they began to make a Virtue of Necessity, and soon after Songs and Laughter drove away all their melancholly Ideas.

There was in the Cart, I had almost said the Coach, in which I was, fourteen Women and a young Man, who entertained them infinitely by a thousand Rallies that he made with the gayest Air. An Abbe who is going to take Possession of a rich Abbacy could not express more Joy. We were all surprized at so ill-timed a Gaiety ; he perceived it, and said to us,—By the frequent Burst of Laughter that escape me, you take me for a Madman : Do me more Justice, if you please : When I reflect on the last Trick I play'd my most honoured Father, I cannot forbear shaking my Sides at his Expence,

I am the Son of a rich Bookseller in the *Rue St. Jacques*, who took effectual Care to spoil me in my Infancy ; for at five Years old I laughed in his Face, if he pretended to give himself an Air of reprimanding me ; and every Time that, in his Passion, he proceeded to Action with me, I never failed to throw as many Volumes into the Well as I had received Blows : I should tire you if I related all the malicious Tricks that I have play'd him. Judge of them by the
the

the Resolution he has now taken, to sacrifice an only Son to his Resentment at them; for I have neither Brother nor Sister, nor shall ever have according to all Appearances, for my Father and Mother are too old to revenge themselves of me in that manner.

To instruct you, pursued he, of what occasions my present Laughter, I must tell you, that these three Days my Father has kept his Shop shut up, and has got the Keys of the House in his own Possession, that I might not escape him. My Son, said he to me Yesterday in the Evening, with a wheedling perfidious Air, get yourself ready to go with me To-morrow Morning into the Country; I guessed that he had no good Intention, and that he designed to send me somewhere to do Pennance, but I did not expect to go so far to perform it. To render the Day of my Departure celebrated, and to engrave the Date of it in *Latin, Greek, and French*, whilst they imagined me in Bed, I slipped into the Warehouse, where seizing without Distinction the first Books that lay under my Hand, I tore out ten or

B 2

twelve

twelve Leaves at the Beginning of every one of them. How many Lawyers have I dismembered! how many Orators mutilated! how many Fathers of the Church have I left upon the Ground, with scarce the Face of a Christian amongst them! I spared nothing, Divinity, Physick, History, Poetry, Romances, all underwent the same Fate; and it is my thinking upon the Grimaces and Lamentations my Father is now making, that I laugh so heartily. I imagine I see him enter his Warehouse, which is now only an Hospital of Invalids, he considers the Ravage I have made, he examines the Wounded, and calculates, with Grief, the Expences it must cost for their Recovery. As to those that have long Prefaces, they would not be the worse if I had but left upon the first Page, their Name, their Age, and the Place of their Birth; but for want of that, these unhappy Martyrs of my Revenge must pass, as I shall do, for Adventurers, that have neither House nor Home, and belong to nobody.

The young Man here ceased to speak, to begin his Laughter again, in such a manner that we could none of us forbear joining with him in it. His Recital served as a Signal to the worthy Companions of my Journey to relate their Adventures; but every one endeavouring to speak the first, they altogether made a Noise equal to that of the *Pierides* after their Metamorphoses. I interrupted it all, to beg them to give me a Moment's Audience. Ladies, said I to them, I beg you would consider, that we are but two of us here to be your Auditors; we cannot at the same Time give the Attention you deserve to all of you. The Bookseller's Son joined himself to me, and we at length obtained of these virtuous Ladies that they should only speak in their Turns.

I then addressed myself to her who made the best Appearance, and desired her to begin; but she conjured us in so polite, and at the same Time so dejected a Manner, to excuse her, that we left her at her Liberty. 'Tis my Turn then, cries her next Neighbour, 'tis my Turn to captivate your Attentions; she

B 3

had

had scarce finished these Words, before she began to relate her Exploits, with a Vivacity suitable to the Subject. She instructed us very finely, as well as her Companions, most of whom, to the Edification of the Public, had made every Year a Retreat of some Months, during which they joined, to a very negligent Dress, an austere Fast upon Bread and Water, with the hardest Labour of the Hands. These innocent Penitents treated as Venial Sins, and witty Stratagems, all the Faults they confessed they had done: To have emptied a Man's Pockets, turn'd him out naked into the Street in the Depth of Winter, or had him thrown out of the Windows; this, they called, teaching Fools to know the World.

This manner of Conversation I had every Day to undergo till we came to *Rochelle*, where we arrived very much fatigued with our uneasy Equipage. There, perceiving myself upon the Point of being embarked, I begged a Quarter of an Hour's Audience of the Captain of the Vessel. I hoped to excite his Pity by a Relation of the Injustice that
had

had been done me, and to render my Recital more touching, I propos'd to accompany it with the Offer of my Diamond; but, from my first Word apprehending that I design'd to tempt his Fidelity, he would not permit me to go on with the rest of my Harangue, the Conclusion of which, perhaps, might have been more agreeable to him than the Beginning. He stopp'd my Mouth, by telling me abruptly, that he would listen to me at the first Calm that overtook us; and that if I tired him by the Narration I had to make, I might depend upon being tied to a Cannon, and receiving a hundred Stripes. The fierce Behaviour of this Officer prevented me from wishing to offer him my Diamond. I feared lest he should refuse it, and that I might receive some rough Treatment for it from his brutal Integrity.

I lost all Hopes, therefore, of terminating my Voyage at *Rochelle*, and the Chagrin it gave me threw me into an Illness, out of which I should never have recovered; but by the Assistance of three *Father Recolets* who were in the Ship.

One of them had already travelled into *Canada*, and had been Guardian of the Convent that those Religious have at *Quebec*, and he was conducting his two Companions thither for a Recruit to the Society. I informed him by what Adventure I found myself reduced to leave my Country against my Will; he pitied me, and afterwards exhorting me to harden myself against the Fate that persecuted me, he by Degrees inspired me with a Courage superior to my Ill-fortune. My Father, said I to him one Day, Thanks to your charitable Exhortations, I am prepared for the most fatal Events. Do not conceal from me, I conjure you, the Horror of the Destiny that attends these unhappy Wretches and myself; in what manner shall we be used when we are in *Canada*? I will inform you, replied he, since your Steadiness of Mind permits me to offer so melancholly a Picture to your View.

Out of all the Men that you have here, pursued he, they will chuse the most robust to hew Stones, fell down Woods, and break up and plow the Ground. Many of the rest will be sent into the
most

most distant Habitations, and by Consequence the nearest to the Savages, who often murder these unhappy Creatures for the least Subject of Complaint they imagine they have against them, or else set Fire to their Plantations. Joined to the Terror of being at the Mercy of the Savages, there is so great a Scarcity of every thing, that three Parts of the *French* who are sent to those Places perish with Hunger.

Before they distribute them into their Quarters, they take great Care to provide every Man his Mate; Celibacy being a real Crime of State in a Colony. The newly landed are obliged to marry upon their Arrival at *Quebec*, which is performed after the following manner: The Dame *Bourdon*, Directores of the House where the Women are placed who come from *Paris*, shares out the Wives as she pleases. Happy is the Bridegroom to whom she gives a Companion sound in Body and in Mind. However, to induce them to receive the nuptial Benediction without Repugnance, she always makes an Elogy to them of the Perfections of their destined Bride.

On

One of the two Companions of the Monk, burst into Laughter at this Part of his Discourse. To say the Truth, cried he, this is a most pleasant Policy ; I imagine I see a Broker, who by one Glance at the Shape of a Man who comes into his Warehouse, finds a Suit as fit as if it were made for him. Laugh as you please, replied the Guardian, what I tell you is literally true, and practised exactly there. The last time that I assisted at this Matrimonial Ceremony, of which I was the Minister, there presented himself a little comical Figure of a Man, who desired the Dame *Bourdon* to shew him her Merchandize, as he called it, that he might chuse himself a Wife, since it was a Moveable that he must burden himself with. The Directores answered him in the same Tone, My Friend, it is not the Custom here to chuse thus ; besides, I have Goods of a very deceitful Appearance, and you may be caught by them ; rather leave the Thing to me, I shall know better than you do, what will be suitable for you, when you have told me who you are, and what you can do.

I am

I am a Taylor at your Service, Madam, said he, I am sent about seventy Leagues from hence to a Canton where there is not one of my Profession, as they tell me. I cannot fail of raising my Fortune there; therefore, Madam, I beg you will consider it. You see I shall not make a Wife unhappy. I should like one that was sedentary, that would get my Provisions ready for me, and help me a little in my Profession. I can do your Business for you, Child, replied the Dame *Bourdon*. I will match thee with a Girl that can work and embroider to Perfection. She is a great Workwoman, handy, neat, entertaining, and shaped like an Angel. I am glad I can make thee so happy, for thy Countenance pleases me.

After having spoke in this Manner, the Directress went to fetch the Bride; and during that Time I exhorted the little Taylor not to marry only with a View of obeying the Laws, but with a Regard to his Consolation and Assistance in his Establishment. I recommended to him above all, to bring up his Children in the Fear of the Lord, and held
all

all the Discourses to him that it was my Power to use upon that Occasion. The Dame *Bourdon* returned some Moments afterwards with a tall large Woman, who had upon her Head a Hood which half covered her Face. We entered all four into the Chappel, where the Directores desired me to place the Woman on the Right-hand, which I did without demanding the Reason of this Novelty. But in the Middle of the Ceremony, having cast my Eyes upon the Bride, I perceived that she had but one Eye, which was the Left, and that in the Place of the Right she had a Plaister, which she concealed artfully from the curious Looks of her Bridegroom.

I confess to you, added the Guardian, that I could scarce maintain my Gravity. When the Ceremony was finished, the Dame *Bourdon* made the two Spouses sign the Billet of their Engagement, of which she kept a Duplicate, and conducted them to the Door, where having delivered the new Bride her Dowry*, which was no great Burden,

* Fifty *Livres* which the King orders to be given them, which is about 3*l.* 15*s.*

den, she left these two Turtles at liberty to go where they thought proper. Afterwards returning to me, Ah! my Father, said she to me, I have made a glorious Marriage. I was strangely embarrassed with that Creature. She was a perfect Devil, and put every thing into disorder here. If I had given her a Husband of her own Size, they would always have been in Arms; but the Taylor wont dare to breathe before his Wife, when once he knows what Metal she is made of. Besides, they may produce Children between them both that may be of a reasonable Size. Another Happiness will be, that he has a robust Wife that will grub up the Land, and hoe, and plant, that they may have something to live upon; for the little good Man is strangely mistaken, if he fancies when he arrives where he is sent, that he shall find his Dinner ready, and that he has nothing to do but to cross his Legs upon his Shop-board. He will have little Custom, I can answer for that.

This Discourse of the Father Guardian infinitely diverted his two Companions.

nions. I laugh'd at it also, but it was but a forced Laugh ; I looked with Horror upon such a Destiny, and shewed plainly enough that I should not behave very well to a Wife given me by the Dame *Bourdon*. The Guardian perceived my Thoughts, and said to me, Don't afflict yourself, Monsieur, your Person and Behaviour deserve to be otherwise treated, and I shall easily prevent you from being reduced to that. Your Air and Manner distinguish you strongly from the Vagabonds amongst whom you have the Misfortune to be confounded ; and who, almost all of them, bear engraved in their Faces the Crimes they come to expiate in *Canada*. You may be assured that you shall be received into our Order with open Arms. If you take that Resolution, you will see that we are more considered there than in *Europe*. If the Monastick State is absolutely unsuitable to you, you have had a good Education, you write well, you shall not need to quit the Town of *Quebec*, if you chuse to stay there. I am persuaded I shall be able to procure you an Employment.

I thanked this charitable Father for his Goodness ; and depending upon the Friendship that he testified to me, I felt myself consoled. The three *Recolets* took care to say Mass very frequently ; and as the Chaplain's utmost Learning was to be able to read, the Reverend Father Guardian preached to the Ship's Company upon all Sundays and Holidays. Yet, though his Sermons were very pathetick, they made no great Impression upon the Hearers. There were some Irregularities in the Vessel ; and these Irregularities were augmented every Day by the Indiscretion of the Officers, who made themselves a little too familiar with our fair *Parisians*. The Sailors followed their Example. There was not so much as a Cabbin-Boy, who did not think they had a Right to make them pay for their Passage. However, the Captain fearing the Reproaches of the Court, more than those of his Conscience, undertook to confine his Nymphs ; but it was very difficult to prevent so many *Halcyons* from making their Nests upon the Waves.

By my Talent for Musick I acquired the Favour of some of the Officers, who understood it a little. This put me more at my Ease, I had a better Bed, was better fed, and had more Liberty. The Monks all felicitated me upon it, except the Father Guardian, who not wishing that I should have any Intimacy but with him, said to me one Day in private, that he advised me as a Friend not to have too much Commerce with the Officers of the Ship, and to be very reserved with them, because, he said, their Behaviour would inevitably corrupt my Manners. So, so, said I to myself, after having listened to him with Attention, the Reverend Father seems fully resolved to wheedle me into his Convent; the Offers of Service that he made me, had they no other Design than to make me take up his Yoke quietly, the Remedy would be worse than the Disease; and if I must be in Slavery, I shall chuse that which may come to an End.

There was in the Vessel another Person who shared the Favours of this pious Religious along with me. This
was

was a young Woman of four or five and twenty, who distinguished herself by a modest and genteel Behaviour. She appeared plunged in a Melancholly which nothing could dissipate; and she had but too much Reason to deplore her Misfortunes, having been embarked with us by Surprize the Day before our Departure. I had been struck as much as the Monk with her reserved Air; and when I had an Opportunity of conversing with her, I found Sentiments in her that prejudiced me in Favour of her Birth, which she concealed with the utmost Care.

Mademoiselle, said I to her one Day, in the Presence of the Father Guardian, do you know the happy Fate that attends us? Have you been told, that we are here as in the Ark of *Noah*, and that we must not go from hence but in Pairs, to be scattered abroad, and multiply upon the Face of the Earth? They will give a Wife to me that I have never seen; and you will be given up in the same manner to an unknown Bridegroom. The Religious then taking up the Discourse, related to her what he had before told me,

me, of the Necessity and the Manner of celebrating this Marriage, *sans ceremonie*. The young Woman, whilst he spoke, lifted up her Eyes to Heaven, and, without speaking, sufficiently testified the Dislike she had for such an Union. Well, Mademoiselle, said I to her, when the Father had finished his Discourse, what do you think of all this? Don't we both live in a very agreeable Expectation? If a mutual Consent is necessary to this Marriage, replied she, I can assure you they shall not easily force it from me. They shall rather take away my Life than oblige me to become the Wife of a Carpenter or a Bricklayer. Upon this the Monk pressed her to inform us of her Family, but she refused to satisfy his Curiosity.

The Dread she had of falling into the Hands of a Man of the most abject Condition excited my Pity, and made me think upon a Method of quieting her Mind upon that Subject: I did not consider long, a Thought came into my Head, which I communicated to her as soon as I could speak to her without being overheard. I asked her, if, to pre-
serve

serve both our Liberties, she did not think it might be proper, upon Occasion, for us to declare that we were married together. I added, that I was promised a Settlement in the Town of *Quebec*, which I judged would be a Pleasure to her, since it would be in my Power by that to prevent her from being exiled into the desert and uninhabited Part of the Country. She told me, that by preserving her from the Horrors that had been represented to her, I had saved her Life; that I need only compose a Fable of our pretended Marriage, and give it to her, and that she would get it so thoroughly by Heart, that she should make no Hesitation in her Answers when they came to interrogate her,

This Expedient appeared good, and even necessary to me; I immediately set to work upon the Romance of our Amours, our Marriage, and our Exile. I kept one Copy of it myself, and conveyed the other privately into her Hands; but her Memory had no Occasion to be burthen'd with these Inventions, for as soon as I had informed the Reverend Father Guardian, that this young Person
and

and myself were two unfortunate Spouses, persecuted by Fortune, that good Religious, believing me upon my bare Word, generously granted us his Protection, and promised to do us Service; which delivered me from the Error I had been in, that his Reverence had only endeavoured to free me from the Misery of my present Situation, in order to subject me to that of a monastick Life.

After a Navigation more fortunate than a Vessel so loaded with Iniquities as ours was could deserve, we arrived at *Quebec* in the Beginning of *November*, 1690. If we had enter'd the River *St. Lawrence* eight Days sooner, we should have been taken by the *English* Admiral *Phipps*, who came with a Fleet of near forty Sail, to make an Attempt upon this Capital of *Canada*, tho' without Success: He lost a great Number of Men, and left several Pieces of Cannon, which served to celebrate his Departure in the Rejoicings that were made some few Days after.

Monfieur *de Longueil*, who is doubtless well known to the Chevalier *de Beau-*
chene,

ebene, and who without dispute is one of the bravest of our Sea Officers, had great Occasion to return Thanks in particular. The Adventure was singular: Monsieur *de Longueil* in the Action received a Musket-shot, the Ball struck upon his Powder Horn and cracked it. He put his Hand to it immediately to take out some Powder to shoot again, and at the same Instant a second Ball hit directly upon the very Place, broke it entirely to pieces, and he escaped with only a slight Contusion.

Upon my Arrival at *Quebec*, I found the Father Guardian had not falsely assured me that he would procure me to be distinguished from the Multitude. I found myself in the Enjoyment of a perfect Freedom, as well as the Person who passed for my Wife, and whom for the future I shall call *Mademoiselle du Clos*, being the Name under which she was placed upon the List. This worthy Religious did not stop here; with a common *Adresse*, only signed by the Hand of his Reverence, we were well received and handsomely lodged in the House of a rich Merchant, near the
principal

principal Church, which is dedicated to our Lady. The Merchant took down our Travelling Names, and made use of them to sign our Arrival, for the Discharge of the Captain of the Vessel, upon the scandalous List, otherwise called the Register of the Names of the Vagabonds sent to inhabit in *New-France*.

The Fear of a great Evil leaves us no room to think of small Inconveniences : Mademoiselle *du Clos*, now she was freed from the dreadful Marriages, the very Idea of which had made her tremble, found herself much embarrassed when it was Time for us to retire to Sleep ; so that when I entered the Chamber which was destined for us, and where she had retired before me, I found her all in Tears, and in as much Affliction as if she had been married to the Brick-layer or Carpenter she had talked off. Go to Bed, Monsieur, said she to me, I design to sit up all Night. No, Mademoiselle, replied I, this Bed shall not be for me, you shall repose in it if you please, Your Terrors offend me. I am a Man of Honour, and an honest
Man,

Man, and did not invent the Fable of our Marriage, to profit by it in the unworthy Manner you seem to apprehend.

In effect, I felt a Respect for her, inspired by her noble and reserved Mein, that hindered me from forming the least Thought of abusing the unhappy Situation she was reduced to. At length I harangued her so strenuously, that I reassured her. I obliged her to go to Bed, after having taken one of her Mattresses which I spread upon the Ground, and upon which I laid in my Cloaths. We were scarce risen the next Morning before our Patron came to see us, though his Convent was at a considerable Distance from the great Church : He desired us not to be uneasy, and assured us again that he would take care of our Establishment. He paid a thousand Civilities both to *Mademoiselle du Clos*, and to me. How uncharitable and how distrustful is the Heart of Man, and to what unworthy Views had not I the Weakness to attribute the Kindness that this holy Religious expressed to us ! But indeed in a few Days after I did him more Justice.

He came again to see us. He was accompanied by Monsieur *de la Valiere*, Captain of the Guards to Monsieur *de Frontenac*, and he informed us, that at the Recommendation of this worthy Friend he had just obtained for me a Post, which was considerable in relation to its Situation for Trade. There is but a small Pay attached to this Employment, added he; but it takes in the Functions of five or six Places at once. In the first place, you will be Cashier in a Fort near the Frontiers of the *Hurons*, where you will have about a dozen Soldiers to pay, who compose the whole Garrison. You will have the Direction of their Magazines, which you are always to keep in Order, in case of an Attack from the Savages. You will be also charged with receiving the Contingencies that the Masters of the Habitations, near the Fort, are to furnish. And, besides all this, you must take care to keep up the greatest Intimacy with the Savages of the Frontier, to dispose them by degrees to submit amicably to the *French* Government.

Being

Being unwilling that Mademoiselle *du Clos* should expend a small Sum of Money which she had with her, and having several necessary Provisions to make for us, I desired our Host to procure me some Money upon my Ring. To this end he conducted me to a rich Trader, who was at once a Goldsmith, a Jeweller, and an Ironmonger, and who immediately very handsomely offered me a hundred Pistoles upon my Diamond, which I accepted, telling him, in the Presence of my Host, and of several other Persons who were there, that if I perished in the Place where I was sent, I desired him to give the Remainder of the Value of my Diamond, or the Diamond itself, in Case I left enough to pay him what he had lent me upon it, to the Reverend Father Guardian of the *Recollets* in that City.

With the Money that I received I bought those Things that were absolutely necessary for us, and a Watch to make a Present of to our Benefactor. The Evening before our Departure, this good Father carried me to the Governor, who had his Residence at one End of

the City, in the Fort *St. Louis*. I received my Instructions there, with an Order to depart immediately ; which I did the Day following under the Escort of five Soldiers, who were given to my Conduct in order to reimplace the same Number who had deserted from the Fort where I was going, and were gone amongst the Savages.

The Reverend Father, to compleat his Generosity, regulated all our Affairs himself, and would see us depart. We were then fully convinced that in obliging us he had listened only to the Dictates of his own good Heart, and to the Voice of Humanity and Christian Charity, since upon his quitting us, perhaps for ever, he redoubled his Benefits. He forbid our Host to accept the least Trifle from us, and refused the Watch that I offered him. I don't doubt of your Gratitude, said he to us, therefore I have no need that you should give me Proofs of it. All that I exact of you is, that you always live in the Fear of God, who will never abandon you so long as you serve him faithfully. After a short Exhortation upon this Subject, he left

left us so touched with his Friendship to us, his Liberality and his Virtue, that we had scarce the Power to bid him Adieu.

How great are the Transports they feel who do good to the Unfortunate ! The Satisfaction that they enjoy, even in this Life, is preferable to all the Pleasures the World can offer. The Lot of this holy Man appeared to me then, more worthy of Envy than all the Grandeur of the Earth ; doubtless we found ourselves less happy by receiving so many Services from him in such pressing Necessity, than he did in being able to do them for us.

We had not been above two Hours embarked and departed from *Quebec*, when Mademoiselle *du Clos* perceiving my *Adresse* upon two Valises that were in the Canoe, said to me : I suppose it was the Keys of those Valises that you had forgot, and that the Reverend Father gave me as he was departing. I know nothing, replied I, either of the Valises or the Keys. Mademoiselle *du Clos* immediately took the Keys and

C 3

opened

opened the Valises. They were full of all Manner of Linnen that could be necessary for us. We were struck speechless at the Sight, and when we had recover'd ourselves we returned innumerable Thanks to that Providence which had thrown into our Way so charitable a Man.

We had for our Guides two Sailors of the Lower Town, who were married. They generally chuse to make use of those, because the Desire of returning to their Wives and their Children, makes them acquit themselves more punctually of these dangerous Commissions. Assisted by the Soldiers, who had Orders to help them in going up the River, they easily carried us in Canoes as far as *Montreal*; but after that, upon account of the rapid Falls and Cataracts, we were often obliged to go on Foot, and sometimes by Ways almost unpassable, where Mademoiselle *du Clos* gave us great Fatigue. I confess to you, that I then repented more than once that I had said she was my Wife.

I imagine she perceived it; for notwithstanding the Complaisance I always expressed

expressed to her, I saw that her Melancholly sunk her still more than the Fatigues of her Journey ; and that in her Behaviour to me, Respect and Timidity began to succeed the easy Air she had with me before. I exhorted her twenty times a Day to take Courage, and be in Hopes of soon arriving at the End of our Journey ; but as one Evening, when she appeared more dejected than ordinary, I began to make some Reproaches upon the Change of her Behaviour to me ; Ah ! Monsieur, said she, melting into Tears, why will you oppose my Grief ? When I have sunk it, will it not be more happy for you ? Your greatest Embarrass, your greatest Expence is now for me ; for an unhappy Wretch who has done nothing for you, whom you don't yet know, and who only deserves your Compassion by being miserable. 'Tis too much, Monsieur, added she ; think of yourself, and abandon me to my Misfortunes : Leave me at the first Habitation that we shall meet with ; I will pass my Life there in a State of Servitude, if Heaven is so irritated against me as to suffer me still to live in so much Misery.

Our Misfortunes, replied I, began at the same Time, and we ought to think ourselves engaged to undergo the same Fortune. Though we are not united by the Ties of Marriage, I regard you as a Wife, I have attached my Fate to your's, your Sorrows are become my own. It was the Confidence you had in me that exposed you to Fatigues so unsuitable to your Sex. I feel myself so moved with your Tears, that I now even wish to bear them for you ; and only would share the agreeable Part of my Fortune with you. Look upon me therefore as a Brother, to whom your Assistance will soon become necessary.

I comforted her by these Discourses, and others of the same Nature. Together with Hope she recover'd Strength, and follow'd me with much more Ease. Our Soldiers kill'd upon the Route some *Orignacs*, or Elks, the Flesh of which our Guides liked extremely, but we thought it detestable. These are wild Deer, the Skins of which are Part of the Commerce the *French* hold with the Savages ; and as it is sometimes colder in *Canada*, than one would imagine from
the

the Climate, in some Cantons they make Cloaths of them that are very useful to the People; tho' the Commerce for them is not so extensive, nor so sought after as that of the Castors Skins.

We lived upon what we got by Hunting, the Habitations that we met upon our Route being only miserable Huts, the Inhabitants of which had nothing to give us but Roots, and wretched *Sagamite*, or boil'd *Indian* Corn, for the greatest Part of those Lands are not so proper for the Produce of Wheat as of other Grain. However, after having passed numberless Lakes, Rivers, and Forests, we at length discovered the so long-wish'd-for Fort. Tho' it was in no very good Condition, and had more the Air of a Redoubt than of a Fort, yet we thought it a noble large Citadel in Comparison of those Rat-Holes in which we had lodged upon our Route.

The Letters of the Governor which I was charged with, made me be received there like a General Officer. The Widow of my Predecessor yielded up her little Apartment to me ready-furnished, and

and taking us as Boarders for a very Trifle, the poor Creature was more our Servant than our Hostess. However, her Company became very useful to *Mademoiselle du Clos*, who lay with the good Woman, from whom she learned in a little Time the Language of the *Hurons*, who were the nearest Savages. The first Thing that I did was to visit the Place, which I had examined thoroughly in less than a Quarter of an Hour. It was a miserable Hole, and all the Advantages of its Situation would not have stopped a Company of Dragoons in *Europe* longer than a Windmill, yet was it enough to command the Savages, and repulse their Arrows.

The Captain, or Commandant of this Fort, was an old Native of *St. Maloes*, or as they term them a *Malouin*, who for some Fault against Military Discipline, which he had committed on board the Ship where he was an Officer, had been set ashore, with only his Sword, upon the Coasts of *New-England*. He had wandered in those Provinces for some Time, and afterwards having join'd the *Iroquesse*, whom he had taught to make them-

themselves Bucklers with the Skins of the *Orignacs*, that were Proof against Fire-Arms, he had several Times assisted them to beat the *French*; but after this, repenting of his making War upon his own Nation, he re-entered into the Service of *France*, and accepted of an advantageous Proposal that was made to him, to take him from the Savages.

This Officer and I soon became Friends. He associated me into the Commerce he carried on at *Quebec*, where he sent Furs of the Castors and the *Orignacs*, which the Savages furnished him with, in Return for Cutlers Wares, Brandy, and Wines. He very often carried us to a Habitation he had formed about half a League from the Fort, and from whence he began to receive a considerable Profit. He had caused above three hundred Acres of Land to be cleared and cultivated, which in that Place was a better Soil than the rest of the Country. The Wheat which it produced was excellent; he sold a Part of it, we consumed the rest at the Fort, and filled our small Magazine with it.

Mademoiselle *du Clos*, who had a lively Genius, fertile in Expedients, advised him to make a little *Gonnesse* * of his Habitation, by making Bread in it for the *French* in the Nighbourhood, who, for want of understanding how to bake it, eat less Bread than they did Roots and Flesh. This Advice appeared very reasonable to the old *Malouin*, who desired her and our Hostess to take upon themselves the Execution of this Project. They immediately set to work upon the Flour, and the first Baking answer'd our Expectations so well, that we were obliged to augment our Quantity of Loaves every Day. A great Number of idle Fellows, who were half-starved, finding that they might have Bread ready-bak'd in Return for Castors and Elks Skins, took to hunting them, that they might come to our Habitation as to a Market, where they could procure themselves so necessary a Provision. In six Months Time we had so much Custom, that we received a hundred Skins in a Week; and if, together with this, we could have
pro-

* A small Village near *Paris*, famous for the Excellence of its Bread, with which it supplies that City.

procured as much Wine and Brandy from *Quebec* as we could have disposed of, we should have raised a considerable Fortune.

But the lively and enterprising Genius of Mademoiselle *du Clos* did not permit us to continue our Commerce ; she was meditating an important Design, which she made a Mystery of to me. Our Hostess sometimes carried her to the Land of the *Hurons*, whose first Huts were not a Day's Journey from our Habitation, and they went there to exchange Household Utenfils for Furs. Mademoiselle *du Clos* took a Pleasure in passing three or four Days with these Savages ; what the Widow had taught her of the Language being sufficient to make her understood by them. She taught them the Uses they were to make of the Things she brought to them ; and as she always told them what contributed to make their Lives more pleasant, they listened to her with the greatest Attention. At length, she had the Address to gain their Confidence to such a Degree, that once, after having remained a Fortnight with them in their Huts, she returned

turned to us with two Daughters of one of the most principal *Hurons*, who had trusted them to her Care, to instruct them in the *European* Manner of providing every thing necessary in the Family, in which they succeeded amazingly.

It was in this manner that, to prevent her being any longer a Burden to me, Mademoiselle *du Clos* was preparing herself a Retreat, which was the more honourable, as it was the Work of her own Ingenuity and natural Eloquence. The Reputation of her Merit, and of her Love to the *Hurons*, was spread abroad amongst that People, and made so lively an Impression upon their innocent Minds, that the Chiefs of the Village, when she went there to conduct her two Disciples home, after an Education of six Months, assembled together, and constrained her to become their *Sakgame*, or Sovereign.

She employed the first Months of her little Sovereignty in penetrating into the Dispositions of her Subjects; and when she had Reason to think that she might depend upon their Attachment and Fidelity,

delivry, she writ a long Letter to me, the Substance of which was; that she thought it was not in her Power to find a better Method of proving her Gratitude to me, than by putting herself in a Condition to be no longer a Burden to me; and that this Scheme had now succeeded so well, that she hoped she should very soon be able to convince me that Ingratitude never had a Place in her Heart. After many more Compliments than I deserved, she desired me for the future to give her People, in Exchange for their Furs, as many Kettles and Kitchen Utensils as I could, and a large Quantity of Fire-Arms. She afterwards demanded of me, for herself, some Bushels of Wheat, with some Seeds of Hemp, Flax, and several Kinds of Roots, sending me at the same Time a Present of a very considerable Quantity of Skins, amongst which there were several of the white Castor, which are the most valuable, and the scarcest. I performed her Commission very exactly, and joined to the Things which she expected from me some Barrels of Brandy, the Distribution of which, I doubt not, gained her many Hearts; for any thing may be done with

with these People by the Help of strong Liquors.

My Associate, the Captain of the Fort, lost considerably by the Departure of Mademoiselle *du Clos*, who in the little Time that she had had the Management of his Habitation, had entirely changed the Face of it; therefore, he would have engaged me to go and reclaim my Wife, and rather demand her by the Sound of Muskets, than abandon her thus to the *Hurons*; but if she had been in reality my Wife, I should not have been so foolish as to act the *Mene-laüs*, a Part which now would find but few Imitators.

Having no longer Mademoiselle *du Clos*, I became less useful to my Associate, who soon made me sensible that he desired to break the Partnership. I consented to it haughtily, tho' embarrassed enough what Method I should make use of to trade upon my own Account. I had Recourse to the Reverend Father *Recolet*, my Protector, who also did me the Service of buying at *Quebec* my *European* Merchandize, which
he

he sent to me at the Fort, in Exchange for my Furs. I had soon Reason to be glad that he had broke our Association, for the *Sakgame* took care to address her Savages to me, who soon made me abound with all manner of Skins.

The Jealousy that the Captain of the Fort conceived at this had almost proved my Ruin : He was sensible of the Mistake he had committed, and far from endeavouring to repair it by Advances of Civility, which would infallibly have reconciled us, he began by endeavouring to disappoint me, by preventing me from sending any more Fire-Arms, under the Pretext that the *Hurons* might perhaps in time make use of them against us. I reproached him with this Behaviour, and he made a Jest of what I said. I gave Advice of it to *Made-moiselle du Clos*, who knew better how to punish him than I did. By the first Caravan which brought us Skins, she did not fail to send a Demand for Fire-Arms. I answered, for my Part, that I had none came to me, tho' I demanded them preferably to any thing else. The *Malouin* did not answer the Savages so complaisantly,

ly, he told them roughly, that they had been furnished with enough of them, and they must expect no more. The *Hurons*, at this Answer, immediately reloaded their Merchandize upon their Canoes, and carried them back again, where they kept them till it was a proper Time to join the Body of their Nation, who once every Year carry their Furs to *Montreal*, in two or three hundred Canoes, together with the *Atakouets*, and other Nations.

The *Malouin* suspected me to be an Accomplice in this Business, and harbouring no Scruples as to the manner of revenging himself, it was in vain for me to be upon my Guard, for it had almost cost me my Life. He invited me one Day to eat of a Root, that I took for a Triffue; he seemed to eat of it first, and praised the Goodness of it extremely: I was the Dupe of his Praises, and I must have died at the Table, if a Soldier, who was present, and who knew the Remedy I stood in need of, had not immediately given it both to me and to that Traitor, who copied perfectly well all the Contortions which
that

that venomous Fruit made me fall into; all the Difference there was between the Captain and me was, that the Poison swell'd me in a manner that it surpassed his Talent of Imitation.

The dreadful War that *Lewis XIV.* had then upon his Hands had an Influence over us, for it interrupted our Commerce, and we remained entirely out of Business. Those who possessed Habitations occupied themselves in rendering them more convenient, and more agreeable; this inspired me with a Desire of having one, tho' I had no Intention to stay in this Country any longer than to amass wherewithal to live handsomely in *Europe*. The Ground that I chose, and which was granted to me, upon the Condition of a small Acknowledgment, which I paid according to the Custom, was of no large Extent. It was situated between a Hill, that bounded a Forest of exceeding high Trees, and a little Brook, that run into the River *St. Lawrence*, between the Lake *Ontario* and *Montreal*. Besides the Beauty of the Place, I saw a Mile from thence there were six or seven *French* Families established,

lished, whose Neighbourhood I judged would be very useful to me, which made me prefer this Spot to any other.

I discovered afterwards that my Neighbours were good Protestants, who did not desire to appear so; about thirty Years before, their Parents having been forced to seek a distant Retreat, had refused themselves there with great Riches. They were also very commodiously lodged, and each of their Houses, in the Incurfions of the Savages, was much safer than even our Fort. What made this Residence entirely agreeable, and delivered it from all Fears of an Insult, was, that six or seven hundred *French*, who were dispersed in those Parts, made it their common Asylum. I found there several young People, with whom I passed my Time in Hunting and Fishing, when I was not busied in Planting, or Sowing, or looking after my Buildings; these were my Occupations for two or three Years; and I never went to the Fort, but when I was obliged to it, in order to acquit myself of the Duties of my Employment.

Our River furnished us with excellent Fish, and in great Abundance. We had several Kinds of Birds, and in particular a great Quantity of Bustards. Our Chace supplied our Kitchens with Provisions, and our Magazines with Furs. The neighbouring Woods were full of Wild-Deer, not so large, but much finer than those of *Europe*. I may say, that I was planted there in the Land of Promise.

Whilst I lived in this manner at my Country-Seat, I received only two or three Letters from Mademoiselle *du Clos*, because the *Hurons*, dreading lest she should leave them, had conjured her to quit our Frontiers, and establish her Residence in the Center of their Habitations. She sent me Word, in her last Letter, that she should be charm'd to see me, and that if I would do her the Pleasure to come and pass some Days with her, her Messengers could conduct me by Ways much more practicable and easy than those we had travelled together. One of the young Neighbours of my Habitation, to whom I communicated this Letter, seeing me resolute upon the Journey, pressed me so strongly to make it, and to
carry

carry him along with me, that he determined me to take it. I promised him to depart after I had been at the Fort, where I was willing to shew myself before I went.

One of the Messengers of Mademoiselle *du Clos*, dispatching himself from the rest to carry her the News of my speedy Departure for her Court, made such extraordinary Haste, that in the second Day of our March, tho' we had above sixty Leagues to go, we met an Escort which he brought to meet us, and who conducted us more like Ambassadors than private Men. I no longer doubted then but she had acquired a great Authority over this People. I was amazed at it, but my Astonishment augmented still more, when I approached the Place of her Residence.

I perceived cultivated Plains, Huts solidly built, Villages peopled with Men of different Professions. This prudent and politic Sovereign had re-assembled all the *French* Prisoners that she could find amongst the Savages, whom those People sometimes kept to learn from them

them the Art of making War ; and all the Soldiers who had deserted to them, chusing rather their free Life than the Military Discipline of their own Nation.

The *Sakgame*, by the Help of these Strangers, had established a Kind of Schools, in which most of the *Hurons* exercised themselves, and succeeded perfectly in the Arts most useful to Society. About twenty Cabbins planted round that of their Sovereign, seemed in these Desarts rather a good Town than a Habitation of Savages. These Cabbins are very large, and contain each of them five or six Families, and each of those Families often consist of above two hundred People. As this Place might properly be called the Capital of the Country, nothing was wanting ; and their Policy was such, that the Chiefs of all those Cabbins assembled every Day at the *Sakgame's* Court, to hold a Council with her upon what was necessary to be done for the public Good.

As the Friend of their Sovereign, I was received with astonishing Acclamations ; they were in reality surprizing,
and

and appeared more proper to terrify than to do Honour. The young Man who accompanied me, owned to me afterwards, that he was frighten'd, and that he imagined that these Savages were rejoicing together, by these Cries, for having got us into their Hands, and that they designed by our Deaths to declare War against the *Freneh*.

The *Sakgame* had too much Prudence not to follow the Customs of her Subjects in Things that were indifferent. When we presented ourselves before her, we found her adorned with Rows of Beads, Bracelets, Feathers, and Furs. Nothing could have prevented us from laughing at this Oddness of Magnificence, but the serious and majestick Air that she put on. The Ancients of the Nation were on each Side of her, and preserved also a surprizing Gravity. They wear long Robes of Beaver Skins, which seemed to add a new Ridicule to their strange and grotesque Figures. We could not say of them what *Cineas* said to *Pyrrhus* of the *Roman* Senators. We should sooner have imagined them to be old Baboons, than Kings.

After

After the first Compliments and the *Huronick* Ceremonial, which the Sovereign observed very punctually, she addressed her Speech to me, and told me that she valued the Pains I had taken to come to see her there above all the Services that I had done her; that she desired me not to take it ill that for that Day, (on account of the particular Ceremonies which the Principals of the Nation would expect from her) she conformed to their Customs, and was under a Necessity of desiring us to oblige her therein; which we promised to execute very punctually. We then began the Feast by Smoaking, after having addressed these Words to the Sun; *Here, Sun, smoak*: For they dare not touch the *Calumet*, without having beforehand invited the Sun to smoak. But that Planet, as polite as the Savages, never accepts their Offer. It is not that they adore the Sun, or that they think it animated. It can scarce be said that they have the least Tincture of Religion; but they are very exact in following the Customs they have received from their Ancestors, and this is one of the most sacred.

We were very handsomely entertained in the *French* Manner ; we eat also, out of Complaisance, of several Meats prepared after the Mode of the *Hurons*. Their *Sakgamite* was much to my Taste, it is a Mixture very different from what we make of Wheat. The Ancients had no sooner their Portion in their *Ourgans*, or Porringers, than they began to eat, but with profound Silence. We were obliged to imitate them, that we might lend our Attention to a young Man who sung during the whole Repast, in order to oblige Mademoiselle *du Clos* ; for when they regale any Person, the Host sings in Praise of him, whatever he thinks proper ; and as she did not understand the Language so well as to be able to perform this Ceremony, it was concluded that one of her Domestick Officers should sing for her. I don't very well know what this Singer could say to our Honour and Glory. He praised us, I suppose, upon our Address in taking the Castors upon the Ice, or upon the Number of Enemies that we had killed and destroy'd.

I should be in the wrong to forget, that among the Meats which were serv'd up to us, there was one which my Companion and myself was not in the least inclined to taste; it was, nevertheless, the Dish of State; it was like the fatted Calf, by which they celebrated our Arrival; in fine, it was the delicious Morfel, the most valuable, and the most esteemed by them. This Dish never adorns their Table but upon great Festivals, and passes for the most shining Mark of Distinction that they can give to Guests worthy of their utmost Regard. In a word, this Dish, so curious and so distinguished from the rest, was an Animal named by them *Chacora*, and with us called a Dog, which they had caused to be roasted, that nothing might be wanting in the Splendor and Magnificence of the Banquet.

We lay in the Cabbin which was appointed for the *French* who resided there. I saw a Forge, a Carpenter's Workhouse, several Ovens for baking of Bread, and one for the making of Earthen Ware. They spread before us Sheets made in the *European* Manner,

upon Matts made of the Straw of *Indian* Corn, and covered with the curled Fleeces of the Wild-Bulls, which are as convenient at least as our Mattresses. The following Days we were not at our Liberty, being obliged to employ them in honouring by our Presence the Entertainments that the Ancients regal'd us with, by making the Youth of both Sexes dance before us, and some young Men perform the Military Exercise with their Fire-Arms, which they began to execute tolerably well.

They conducted us likewise in Ceremony to two Forts, which the prudent *Sakgame* had caused to be built near the Lake *Ontorio*, in two Defiles, thro' which the *Iroquese* were obliged to pass to attack them. These Forts, tho' designed and carried on by Soldiers who had no Knowledge of the Rules of Fortification, yet were regular enough according to the Ground, and so well situated, that they could only be approached in one Place, defended by two small Bastions, and pallisadoed with Poles of Twelve Feet high; the whole surrounded by a good Parapet, from whence a
hundred

hundred Men, under Cover, might repel a thousand, in a Country where they have not the Use of Cannon.

We perceived at the same Time Lands waving with Wheat, others with Maiz, Pease, Hemp, and all manner of useful Vegetables, and Hills entirely cultivated and loaded with Tobacco Plants. Here wild Vines loosed from the Trees round which they grew, and pruned after the manner of the *Europeans*, presented themselves to our View; there Nurseries, or rather Forests of young Chesnuts, Apples, and Walnut-Trees, struck our Eyes, and employed them agreeably.

I expressed my Surprise at this to Mademoiselle *du Clos*, who said to me, You see nothing yet, all this is only a Sketch of what I design to shew you; if you remain in this Country, and if *France* is as indifferent to you as it is to me, in ten Years you would see this Canton of my good Friends as beautiful as the most fertile of our Provinces. At these Words, turning towards the Chiefs of the Savages, she repeated to them, in their

D 3

Jargon,

Jargon, what she had said to me in *French*; to which they all answered by an Exclamation, which signified, *Ab ! How well that is said !*

At length the good People left us at Liberty, after the *Sakgame* had desired them not to constrain themselves any longer, by accompanying us without being able to understand our Conversation. If the *French* Language was *Hebrew* to them, it was, however, very familiar to twelve young Maids, who surrounded their Sovereign, and composed a very amiable Court; particularly the two whom she had brought to our Habitation, who understood it perfectly, and taught it the Children of their Cabbin. Only one Thing scandalized us in the Behaviour of these Maids of Honour; there was something so very unreserved in their Manners to us, that they seemed to be making Love to us; what redoubled our Astonishment was, that *Mademoiselle du Clos*, who was a Witness of their Advances, far from being offended, appeared to authorize them. She laughed inwardly at our Surprise, and easily judging that we were curious to know
the

the Cause of it, she told us, one Day as we were walking with her in an Isle, equally fertile and agreeable, which her Engineer Soldier was fortifying in the only Place where it was not inaccessible.——

Confess the Truth to me, Gentlemen, said she to us, is not it true that you knew not what to think of the free Airs I let my Maids put on? Tho' I love them as much as a tender Mother loves her Children, yet I cannot think them worthy to be blamed for what they do; and I am satisfied that you will not condemn them any longer yourselves, when you are informed of the unhappy Situation to which my poor Savages are reduced: Would you believe that, of five or six thousand Persons, contained in the three Habitations which, as this, acknowledge me as *Sakgame*, and which is near a Third of the whole Nation of the *Hurons*, there are not actually four hundred Men capable of bearing Arms? Their Neighbours, the *Iroquesse*, have destroyed three Quarters of the Nation, and deprived the other Quarter in the last War of its best Defence, I mean of

all the Youth proper to combat vigorously. Have not you remarked, that all the Men here are either under twenty, or above fifty, and that there is at least ten Times more Women than Men? Judge then, whether, in this Situation, my People are not interested in finding Methods to preserve their Country.

Besides, pursued the *Sakgame*, Marriage in this Country is not looked upon as an Engagement that fixes you forever. To-day they marry, To-morrow perhaps they part. If a Husband absents, his Wife takes another, whom she keeps till his Return. Does he come back? she turns him of the two off whom she likes the least. It is not, Gentlemen, added she smiling, that I exact from your Complaisance, that you should enter into the political Views of my Savages at the Expence of your Religion. I only relate this to you to justify the unreserved Procedure of my Female Attendants. I cannot, however, conceal from you, that the Chiefs of my Council are to conjure you not to disdain to take for Wives, during your Residence here, those who are most agreeable to you; if you grant them

them that 'Favour, you will see those whom you chuse respected, beloved, and called the Supporters of the Nation.

The young Man who accompanied me in this Journey, and who was not very scrupulous in his Nature, appear'd something in Emotion at this Description, and penetrated with the Ravage that had been made in the Country by a Deluge of *Iroquesse*, this new *Deucalion* would willingly have contributed to repair that Misfortune; but however willing he was to do good, I had Power enough over him to prevent him from being so charitable, by forcing him to reflect, that this Liberty of contracting Marriages of two Days would not excuse the Debauchery of it to the *French*.

In another Conversation which I had with Mademoiselle *du Clos*, I related to her the Difference I had with the Commandant of the Fort, the Danger I had run in eating with him, and gave her a Description of the Retreat that I had choose, to deliver myself from the Designs of that Officer. She, on her Side,

informed me of all that she had done since our Separation, and I admired her in all her Proceedings. If your People, said I to her, were a hundred Times more numerous than they are, they would not be less submissive to such a *Sakgame*. Effectively, her Policy in the least Trifles, her Prudence in not proposing any Charges but what were visibly useful in the Customs of her Country, her Address in preserving their Love, by following herself those Customs which she did not approve, provided that in themselves they were of no Consequence to the Happiness or Misery of these good Creatures; all this indicated a superior Genius, capable of every Thing.

I asked her once, why none of the *French* lodged at her Cabbin. I shall always, replied she, avoid having them about me, or even ever speaking to them in private; in the first Place, because I would no longer appear a *French* Woman, nor give the least Occasion for seditious Hints, to say that I have any Design of ever quitting this Country. The second Reason, which I am willing to own to you, tho' it gives me Pain, is,
that

that I have much more Confidence in my own Subjects than in those of *Louis* the XIVth. No, Monsieur *le Gendre*, I should not sleep in such Tranquility as I do, if I knew myself at the Mercy of Persons who are continually guilty of Actions of Perfidy. It is not indeed very surprizing, since, if you except a small Number, the *French* who are sent into *Canada* are all Libertines, banished from their native Country as Disturbers of the publick Peace.

I must also tell you, added she, that I have conceived a Tendernefs for my *Hurons*, which they highly deserve. You cannot imagine how many Tears, Sighs, and Groans a slight Indisposition cost them that I had some Time ago, whilst the *French*, who are in this Habitation, were very likely reckoning up what would be their Share of my Spoils. I am also very sensible of the Difference between their Behaviour. I use the *French* with Respect, because I stand in need of them; but as soon as I can do without them, I shall only keep three or four of them, whom I know to be Men of Honesty, and who are at present

sent useful to me as Counsellors, since they give their Opinions in my Council equally with the Ancients of the Nation. One of the principal is the Soldier, whom you saw occupied in fortifying the Island, which I intend to make a secure Asylum, in case of an Irruption from the *Iroquese*; the other is a very understanding Native of *Bretaigne*, by whose Advice we regulate ourselves as to improving the Country. The first is my Minister in the Affairs of War, and the other my Chancellor.

It was he who caused to be transplanted to this Place a great Quantity of wild Vines, which are found near the Lake *Ontorio*. He even caused such Abundance of Grapes to be gathered there, that he has procured a sufficient Provision of Wine; it is indeed so harsh a Wine, that it is not drinkable; but it is not the less useful to us, for we make Brandy of it, which supplies the Place of that which they used to receive from the Fort, before our Difference with the Commandant. My *Breton* assures me, that he can also draw off a Brandy from the Lees of Cyder, which he designs to make

make of the Fruits of several Thousands of Apple-Trees which we have, and of which he has chosen out the finest to graft upon good Kinds of Fruit, which he has sent in Search of as far as *Mont-real* and *Frontenac*.

This is not all, continued she ; before my Arrival those Women, who knew how to use a Distaff, made in that manner Cloaks, Cowls, Coverings for their Beds, and Lifts, in the Form of very short Petticoats, all with that beautiful Wool of the *Ciboulas*, or Wild-Bulls, which we have here ; but since I have obliged them to sow Hemp, which succeeds admirably in this Country, I have introduced the Use of Linnen, and there is no longer any Person in the Habitation but wears it, except the young Men, when they go to the Chace, especially that of the *Ciboulas* ; as they wander very distant then, and go far towards the South-West, they will not carry any Thing but their Arms.

If any Chagrin interrupts the Course of the Pleasure I take in contemplating my Work, it is that I see no Person whom

whom I can inspire with the same Attachment that I have for my Situation, and who might be capable of finishing the Completion of their Happiness, or at least preserving it after my Death, upon the same Footing that I shall leave it. This Reflection afflicts me the more, the more grateful my Savages shew themselves for the little I have done for them; their Probity, their Simplicity, the Goodness of their Hearts, render them so dear to me, that if I was separated from them, I should without any Hesitation quit my Family and Country to return to them again.

I am not the least astonished at your excessive Tendernefs for them, interrupted I, in this Part of her Discourse; I am so thoroughly perswaded that it is pleasing, in whatever Part of the World it is, to be honoured and almost adored by a numerous People. I know not whether Self-love has not a Share in your Kindness for these humane People. You need not doubt it, returned *Made-moiselle du Clos*, it finds its Account perfectly here. I perceive with the highest Satisfaction the Respect and the
Love

Love they have for me. Imagine to yourself those despotick Authorities which make themselves be obeyed by a Look : Such is this of mine, and I may say still more agreeable, since it is founded not upon Fear, but wholly upon Affection.

I even remark continually, that they contrive every thing that may give me Pleasure ; and to conform themselves to my Manner of Behaviour, throw off their own. It was, for Example, a Custom established amongst them, to go into each other's Huts, and sit down in the first Place they come to, without saying a Word, or using the least Civility ; now, they salute one another by bowing the Head a little, and smiling, only because they observed that it was thus I behaved to them when they addressed themselves to me.

Those who approach me the least, and are at fifty or sixty Leagues distance from hence, name me no otherwise, than *The good Spirit, and the Friend of the Onuntio above*. They gave me this Name, because that seeing them docile in learning

learning the Knowledge of God, I have accustomed them not to begin any considerable Enterprize without lifting up their Eyes to Heaven, to demand the Assistance of the *Great Onuntio*, who made the Heavens, the Earth, the Sun, the Moon, and all the Stars ; who created us to love and to adore him, and who will not have us do hurt to each other. This they observe now very religiously, both in my Presence and in my Absence ; which shews how easy it would be to make them embrace Christianity, if the Missionaries, who undertake that Enterprize, had as much Prudence as they have Zeal for the Glory of God : But these new Apostles, looking upon themselves as Martyrs from the Moment they set their Foot in these Nations, and renouncing their Lives, in effect, take all the Measures possible to arrive at such Conclusion. Instead of appearing at first to desire only the temporal Good of the Savages, that they might lead them insensibly to the spiritual, they begin by declaiming against their Religion in Terms which terrify these Wretches, who imagine they are listening to Blasphemies ;

phemies ; and by preaching to them the abstracted Truths of Religion, as if their rude Understandings could comprehend them. How should these material Auditors believe in such Mysteries ! They who can imagine no other Happiness in the Region of the Dead, according to their own Account, but that of feeling no Cold, finding the best Maiz there, Brandy as much as they please, Chaces, where the Game will come of itself to the Hunters, and have a most exquisite Flavour ; and to compleat their Happiness, an eternal Peace with the *French* and the *Iroquese* !

Yet, though my *Hurons* still think in this Manner, I do not believe that it is impossible to make real Christians of them. If you could procure me some able Missionary, who would not precipitate Things, do nothing of his own Head, and in a word follow my Counsels, I would preserve him from Martyrdom, and assist him to convert this Canton of Savages. This is what I desire you to inform the Father *Recolet*, our Protector, of ; and to instruct him at the same time, that I labour for the
Service

Service of God and that of the King, by my endeavouring at the Happiness of this People. Let that great Monarch only preserve them from the Fury of the *Iroquese*, and I will answer for the rest. Conjure his Reverence likewise, to spare no Pains in order to efface the ill Impressions that have been made upon the Mind of the Governor, by the Complaints of some Missionaries, in relation to the *Hurons*, whom they have endeavoured to represent as an inconstant Nation, perfidious and barbarous, only for having conducted themselves according to those Customs of their Nation, received from their Ancestors. The *Hurons*, say they, have killed, have eat the Prisoners, which they made when a Descent has been attempted upon their Coasts: They are therefore the most barbarous Savages, they are *Anthropophages*, they are Monsters. — Good God! could they do otherwise? let us judge of it without Prejudice.

They see arrive upon their Coasts Enemies, who to their Eyes appear entirely terrible, monstrous, supernatural, who have Thunder and Lightning at

at their Disposal, and are almost invulnerable. How many Prodigies! How is it possible not to be terrified by them! If the *Hurons*, in defending their Lives, have the Happiness to seize upon one of these redoubtable Enemies, why are they not to kill them for their own Safety? It would be Imprudence to spare them. Yes, say they, but why then eat them? For what Reason would you not have them eat them? 'Tis their Custom to treat in this Manner all the Enemies they can take. Would you think a Shooter reasonable, who having never seen any but red Partridges, should not kill a grey one that came into his Canton? or that having killed it, and seeing it fat and good, should hide it in the Earth to perish, rather than eat it? We should never judge so rashly, if leaving off our Prejudices, we would put ourselves in the Place of those whose Judges we want to be.

If the People of this new World, preventing us in the Art of Navigation, had first come to make a Discovery upon our Coasts, what would they not have had to relate of *France* at their re-
turn

turn home? Having discovered an unknown Land to the North West, would they say, we resolved to land there in order to take possession of it in the Name of the Chief of our Nation, and to make our Gods be adored there. Some Fishers, whom we endeavoured to seize upon to inform ourselves of the Country, and of the People that inhabited it, having fled to a large neighbouring Habitation, these Barbarians, instead of offering us Tobacco and Maiz, or at least suffering us to hunt and take in Water, rained upon us a Storm of large round black Stones, which struck us down without our seeing the Hands that cast them at us. There was nothing but Smoak, Lightning, and dreadful Claps of Thunder. Those of our Company whom we had set ashore, finding themselves struck, and not knowing against whom to defend themselves, regained our Canoes and put off to Sea. Then several of these Savages came from under their Habitations, as the wild Beasts come out from their Dens when the Night approaches. They appeared to us to be entirely covered with Skins of different Colours, of an extraordinary

ordinary Figure, and dressed in such a Manner that one would imagine it must be painful for them to move. They examined with Attention our Dead extended upon the Shore, and instead of eating the new-killed Flesh, they covered it under the Earth ignominiously, despising it more than the *Orignacs*, or the meanest Beast of their Forests.

The Necessity of procuring Water and Provisions obliged us nevertheless to land at some Days Voyage from thence in a Place which seemed uninhabited, and where notwithstanding this we were immediately surrounded by Figures resembling the first, but less shy. We could only see their Faces and their Hands, the pale and livid Colour of which they have not Sense enough to hide, by covering it with the different Paintings which we know so well how to make use of. We presented to them the *Calumet of Peace*, and some of our finest Skins; after which they came up to us, speaking to us in an odd Language, of which we could not comprehend a Word. We made them, however, comprehend by our Signs, that
we

we stood in need of Water and Provisions: They brought us a kind of *Sakgamite* hard and baked, of which they eat themselves first, and which we thought tolerably good. They drank also before us of a prepared Water, whose Colour was suspicious to us. They brought it in little round Skins, which were hard, transparent, and very well wrought; but we durst not drink of it; and they were obliged to give us Water, with which we filled our Goatskins.

We remarked, during some Days that we staid to take Provisions, that these Savages had no Gods, at least we did not see that they had any to whom they did Homage. They have nevertheless a superstitious Veneration for Grasshoppers, Bats, and Lizards; for they several times prevented us from eating of them, and seemed to look upon us with Horror when we attempted it. It is probable also, that they believe that after this Life there is no other in the Country of the Dead; for when any one dies in their Cantons, though it is one of their Chiefs, they neither give him Maiz, nor Utensils, nor Arms, nor even

even Slaves to serve him in the other World.

We had Compassion upon the Blindness of these unhappy Wretches. We followed them one Day into a Place where they carried one of their Dead singing before him, and which we imagined to be a Temple. Our * *Piaces* advertised us to carry with us our great God *Vitzliputzli*, whom they shewed to them, exhorting them to acknowledge their Error, and profit by the Advantage they had of being able to cast their Eyes upon the greatest of the Gods; but far from prostrating themselves before him as our *Piaces*, and adoring him together with them, these impious Wretches had the Insolence to overthrow with a profane Hand this dreadful God, to break his Legs, and tear off his Wings: At this Spectacle, seized with a just Horror, the Priests of *Vitzliputzli* flew upon these infamous Men to revenge our God by their Death and the Pillage of the Temple; but, less strong than courageous, our *Piaces* were seized upon and closely bound; as
to

to us, having hastily regained our Canoes, we escaped from their furious Hands : But we had the Chagrin before our Departure, to see our terrible God devoured in the Flames, in the View of our little Fleet.

I ask you now, added Mademoiselle *du Clos*, if an *American* that made this Relation would be unreasonable ? No, certainly, replied I, you plead extremely well the Cause of your Savages. I am no longer surprized that you are pleased with being here : You are become entirely an *American*. You prefer this Habitation to *Paris*, your Cabbin to the *Louvre*, and the *Hurons* to the *French*. You say too much, returned she ; that would be preferring the rough Diamond before the polished ; but at least this proves, that the Savages might think of the *French*, what the *French* now think of the Savages.

The *Sakgame* here ceased to speak ; to give her Time to take Breath I began her Elogium, like a Man enchanted with her Merit : Ah ! Mademoiselle, said I, in my Enthusiasm, what Family
has

has had the Misfortune to lose you, after having been so happy as to produce a Heroine, whose Name ought to become as celebrated as that of the greatest Conquerors? 'Tis that Name exactly, cried she, 'tis that Name alone which I would respect by my Silence, not to reveal the Shame which my Parents have covered themselves with by proscribing me with such Injustice. Mademoiselle, replied I, you quite raise my Curiosity by refusing now to satisfy it. Consider that the *Sakgame* of the *Hurons*, is not obliged to keep the Secrets of Mademoiselle *du Clos*. Besides, what have you to fear? Have I, without knowing it, rendered myself by any Indiscretion unworthy of your Confidence? No, replied she, I do not in the least distrust you, and I am willing to inform you of my Misfortunes; but content yourself with that. Do not endeavour to find out the Persons who have caused them; and promise me, that if ever you return into *France*, you will make no Steps to discover them.

I protested to her that her Desires should be a Law to me, and that she

might depend upon my Discretion: Well then, said she to me, you shall immediately hear Things that you will find difficult to believe. My Parents have behaved to me in a most surprizing Manner, which I will relate to you as succinctly as I can.

My Father was near Forty when he married my Mother, who was a young Person of Nobility equal to his own; but of a Humour as impatient and haughty, as he was flegmatick, plain and easy. You may judge by these Descriptions, that he had not a very despotick Power in his Family. They passed some Years without having any Children, and therefore the first who came into the World became their Idol; it was a Boy. I was born eighteen Months after him, and my Birth was followed three Years after by that of my second and last Brother.

The Preference that was given in every thing to the eldest Son over his Sister had its usual Effect; that is, that it made us dislike each other from our Infancy, and was the Occasion of my
Parents

Parents loving me much the less. I was but too sensible of it, though I was only a Child, and Jealousy seized so strongly upon me, that they were obliged to put me in a Convent, that they might have Peace at home.

I found myself amongst the Religiouses as if I was transported into another World. I should easily have forgot there that I had a Brother more beloved than myself; and should soon have extinguished all the weak Glimmerings of my newborn Jealousy, if they had not been rekindled every Moment by the indiscreet Kindness of a Woman who had been my Governess, and who came to see me very frequently. Her Imprudence entertained me wholly with the Happiness of my Brother; she exaggerated to me, all in Tears, the Respect that was shewn him; the large Quantity of Money he had at his Disposal; the Beauty of his Cloaths; and in fine, the Caresses he received every where; whilst I, entirely forgot in my Retreat, had nothing to distinguish me from the meanest Citizen's Child. She added to this, that they had resolved to make me

take the Veil, to leave my Brother the larger Fortune. These Discourses inspired me with a Horror for him, and for the Monastery.

—Our youngest Brother, whom they designed for a **Chevalier de Malta*, and who was treated as ill as myself, had the same Resentment as soon as he was capable of feeling it. He came frequently to make me a Visit at the Grate: We united our Chagrins, and held our little Counsels together; the Result of which always was, that I should refuse the Habit of a Novice when they proposed to me to take it. My Mother, at length perceiving that they endeavoured in vain to conquer the Repugnance I expressed for that Condition, took me from the Convent, with an Intention of obliging me, by her ill Treatment, to desire myself that I might return thither again.

As prejudiced as I was against our elder Brother, upon my first coming home I endeavoured to gain his Friendship; but the Complaisance that he had
been

* A Knight of *Malta*.

been used with, and the little Regard he saw expressed to us, had entirely spoiled his Mind. The haughty and despising Air with which he received my Advances, and my Civilities, shock'd me ; I complained of it to my Governess, and to my younger Brother, who were the only Persons to whom I could address my Complaints. They shared my Sorrows. The Chevalier particularly was penetrated with them. He sighed sometimes with Impatience to be of an Age to measure his Sword against that of his Domestick Enemy, and he would have been very capable of such an Action. One Day when the old Governor who educated them both, and who had no other Merit but that of having gained the good Graces of my Mother, by expressing a Fondness for her eldest Son, gave it against the youngest, in a little Dispute which happened between the two Brothers ; the Chevalier took Heaven to witness of the Injustice that was done him, and throwing himself upon the Governor with his Sword drawn, he would inevitably have stabb'd him, if his Sword had not been,

as those of Children usually are, blunt at the Point.

I was on my Side exposed to suffer all the Mortifications that my Mother could invent for me. If my Father did not hate me and my younger Brother, at least he had a perfect Indifference for us. Besides, of what use would have been his Kindness? The Husband was no more listen'd to than the Children. When Madam was in a Passion, he was not the Person who trembled least. If he took the Liberty to speak, it was to say, Madam is in the right; and he frequently received, for the return of his Complaisance, a concise Order to be silent, and wait till his Opinion was asked. There was nevertheless a Time in which he lost his Timidity; when he was filled with *Champaign*, Monsieur spoke as high as Madam; but his Courage evaporated with the Fumes of his Wine.

The Friendship that my Brother the Chevalier and I bore to each other displeased my Mother, who to take from us the Consolation we found in being afflicted

afflicted together, forbid us ever to see or to converse with one another in private. She was conscious that our Conversations turned upon the Chagrins that she gave us ; and she imagined by this Injunction she should prevent the Plots that we might form against her Favourite. This Procedure served only to harden us the more against him, and taking care to hide our Cards, we began to do all the Harm we could to our common Enemy. We made use with Pleasure of every Opportunity that presented itself to play him a Trick. This darling spoilt Child in vain endeavoured to be careful of the rich Cloths with which he was adorned, they were never eight Days without being spotted or torn. The Idol was reprimanded, and we triumphed.

We were not permitted to enter into the Closet of my Mother ; the Favourite alone had that Privilege. He went in when he pleased, and played with her Birds. We watched the Moment of creeping in after him without being perceived, and from thence it always happened that some Cage was left

open, or some Cats shut up in the Closet. Such an Act of Carelessness drew upon him frequently Reproofs that transported us. We must confess, that the Pleasure of Revenge was sweet. There are few Evils of which it will not suspend the Pain ; and I confess at that Age had I Virtue enough to renounce it.

My eldest Brother had two Hunting-Dogs, which were his Delight. The Death of these two Animals, so beloved, would have been an Exploit worthy of the Chevalier, but the Execution of it was difficult. He spoke to me of it as an Affair of State, and the Weakness I had to enter into the Conspiracy was the Occasion of my Exile ; we formed this glorious Project then, of which, however, we had no other Profit, than having had the pleasing Hope of revenging ourselves. How many People are there in the same Condition, and whose Resentments terminate in thinking what they would do, if their Power answered to their Inclination !

I imagined for some Time, that the Chevalier had abandoned his Design, of
which

which he spoke to me no more, either that he was put off from it, by the Obstacles he met with, or that he had Compassion upon the two proscribed Heads, who were his Favourites too, but they were still more dear to his Brother, and that was sufficient to prevent him from listening to the Voice of Mercy. One Evening, as we rose from Table, he slipped a Packet into my Hand, and said to me in a Whisper; Here, this will dispatch them presently. Lock it up safe. It was, I believe, Arsenick in Powder that he had procured, and which he was afraid they would find in his Pockets at Night. Unhappily for us, the old Governor, who was near us, heard what the Chevalier said to me, and went immediately to my Parents to relate it. He represented to them, doubtless, that I had monstrous Intentions; and the Poison found at Night in one of the Boxes of my Toilette, confirming his Report, my Brother and myself remained attainted and convicted, in their Opinions, of a Design to attempt upon their Persons.

I perceived, when I got up, that the Packet was not where I put it; I imagined that the Chevalier had taken it again, which was the Reason that I was not uneasy, nor took any Measures to prevent the Misfortune that threaten'd me, and of which I was ignorant. I had just dressed me, when an Order was brought me from my Mother, to be ready to depart for a Convent, where she had determined to conduct me. I prepared to obey her with great Dòcility, looking upon the Monastery as a Prison where I should be less unfortunate than I was at home. Whilst they put up my Linnen and my Cloaths, I went to bid my Father adieu, who was in his Closet; but it was in vain that I knocked at the Door, he neither opened it, nor ventured to answer me, doubtless because it had been forbidden him. I run to the Chamber of the Chevalier, to beg him to come and see me in the Convent; I found it empty, and, to retrench all superfluous Circumstances, I went into a Hackney-Coach, with my Mother and the old Governor, whose Name was *du Clos*. They conveyed me to an Inn, where a Chaise ready to depart

depart waited for me. I went into it with the Governor, and remarking that my Mother was preparing to return; Madame, said I to her with Emotion, what can be your Design? Where is Monsieur *du Clos* to convey me by your Orders? Was it not to a Convent in *Paris* that you proposed to carry me? No, Daughter, replied my Mother coldly, I am sending you to that of which your Aunt is the Abbess. You will learn, under the Inspection of so virtuous a Person, to confirm yourself in those Duties, which a longer Stay in your Father's Family might deprive you of. Adieu, Mademoiselle, you have so often said, that you were much better in the Convent than with us, that I suppose this gives you more Pleasure than Pain. I knew not what Answer I ought to make to these Words; and if I had known it, my Mother would not have given me Time to reply; for she mounted again into her Hackney-Coach, and we drove from each other with equal Haste.

The profound Melancholly in which I was plunged from *Paris* to *Rochelle*,
where

where we went, gave great Inquietude to Monsieur *du Clos*; who imagining that I was meditating some fatal Blow for him, he kept himself Day and Night upon his Guard, and supposing, perhaps, that I had still Arsenick about me, he took particular Care to have me eat alone; I am satisfied, he more than once repented the having charged himself with my Conveyance. I have always been perswaded, that his Commission was only to deliver me into the Hands of my Aunt, but that, to punish me for having given him such Terrors upon the Road, and to disembarraßs my Family from so wicked an Ally, being satisfied that he should be justified in whatever he did, he had determined to make use of the Opportunity of the Embarkation that was then making at *Rachelle* for *Canada*.

Instead, therefore, of taking the Road to the Abbey of my Aunt, whither we had only one Day's Journey further, Monsieur *du Clos* very handsomely made his Agreement with the Captain of the Vessel, on board which you was. The rest you are not ignorant of, Monsieur,
and

and you may remember the Condition I was in for several Days. My Life was despaired of, and I should infallibly have lost it, if the Captain had not taken a more particular Care of me than of several others, whom the Voyage threw into a Sickeness. 'Tis true, he had particular Reasons to distinguish me from the other Women who were on board. He had taken me as a Passenger, and was not to receive the Remainder of the Sum, for which he had agreed upon with the old Governor, till he brought back into *France* a Certificate of my Arrival at *Quebec*, where, I presume, he had Orders to abandon me to Providence: To instruct you in this Agreement, I must tell you that the Captain informed me, that Monsieur *du Clos* had delivered me up to him under the Name of *Margaret du Clos*, his Daughter, assuring him that the sole Reason of my being thus banished, was for having several Times attempted to poison my Father, my Mother, and my eldest Brother; and that very frequently I had been found provided with Arsenick, which I designed to make use of to commit those three enormous Crimes.

The

The Astonishment that the Captain gave me by this Discourse, the Despair of finding myself loaded with so horrible an Accusation, and which, notwithstanding all my Innocence, I could not prove the Falsity of, all this had such an Effect upon me, that I had almost died with Sorrow ; however, as soon as I could speak, I gave the Captain a true Recital of the Adventure of the Arsenick found upon my Toilette. He perceived, by what I had said to him, the Injustice that had been done me in suspecting me guilty of so black an Attempt. As inhuman as he was, he yet appeared to pity me. He did more ; he had the Generosity to give me Part of the Money which he had receiv'd from Monsieur *du Clos*, whom he still supposed my Father, for I did not disabuse him upon that Article. It was thus that I was instructed in the Cause of my involuntary Voyage.

I am ignorant what Reflections the Captain made after this ; but, as if he had repented of his Weakness in believing me, and suffering himself to be moved by a false Recital of my Misfortunes,

in

in two Days after he resumed his usual Ferocity ; he never cast one favourable Look upon me again. I resolved not to discover myself to any Person, and to wait, under the unworthy Name of the Author of my Afflictions, till my Brother, the Chevalier, made known my Innocence, together with his own. I should, nevertheless, have been forced, perhaps, to declare myself, if your ingenuous Compassion had not found a Method of preserving me from the wretched Fate I had to fear.

Mademoiselle, said I then to the *Sakgame*, if Virtue does not preserve us from the Turns of Fortune, at least sooner or later, it always makes us triumph over them. The Malice and Injustice of Mankind set you as a Slave into a foreign Country ; and Providence, more just, has made you live there as a Sovereign. I should live here with great Satisfaction, returned she, if I knew that the Chevalier was no more unhappy than myself. The Tranquility of my Life is only disturbed by the Remembrance of that dear Brother ; and he is the only Mortal beyond the Ocean
for

for whom I interest myself. If I ever see *France* again, replied I, I will contrive some Expedient to procure you News of him, without your discovering yourself any farther than you think proper. But, added I, if this Brother, who is so dear to you, should conjure you to return into the old World, would you reject his Prayers? Sovereigns, replied she smiling, never quit their Dominions, and only converse with each other by Ambassadors. In that Case, said I to her in the same Tone, you must do me the Honour of conferring that sacred Title upon me, and I shall present to him, in your Name, my Letters of Credence, and the *Calumet* of Peace.

I had but one Conversation more with *Mademoiselle du Clos*, after which I demanded my Audience of Leave. She did not grant it to me without Pain; and I was obliged to promise her that I would frequently make her such Visits. If we had accepted of all the Skins that her *Hurons* offered to us, we should have enriched ourselves for ever, but we refused them the most politely that we could possibly; we contented ourselves
with

with suffering them to load with their Presents several Canoes, which they caused to depart for our Habitation at the same Time that we did, and which, nevertheless, did not arrive there till a Month after us, upon account of their having been obliged to take a long and difficult Way. A numerous Escort reconducted us, with the same Pomp as before ; and, out of Gratitude, we sent them back loaded with Wine, Brandy, and other Presents.

At our Arrival I was obliged to quit my Habitation and repair to the Fort. The dreadful War which *France* had then to support extended its Fury even to us ; all the Country was in Alarm. They were continually making Incursions into *New-England*, and the *English* on their Side did the same to us ; they even engaged the Savages to do so. We were obliged to establish a Correspondence between our Canton and the Fort of *Bourbon*, which Monsieur *de Iberville* had just taken from the *English* in *Hudson's Bay* *. They did not escape with that Loss only ; they ravaged

* In *October*, 1694.

ravaged also several of their Islands, and made a Descent upon *Jamaica*; so that, not doubting in the least but they designed to make us a Return, we were under a Necessity of being continually upon our Guard.

The Fort *de Frontenac* indeed prevented us from any Surprize from the *English* themselves; but they had gained several Cantons of the *Iroquese* by the Force of Presents, and those might be upon us before we were so much as advertised of their March. These terrible Savages carried Desolation every where along with them; they destroyed the Plantations, burnt the Cabbins, and spared no Creature. When a Fort stopped their Progress, they ruined all about it with Impunity, the Garrison not daring to attack them, because the *Iroquese* were too numerous, and most of them provided with Cutlasses and Fire-Arms, which the *English* and *Dutch* furnished them with, and with which they fought desperately.

The continual Alarms we were under from the Proximity of their Frontiers,
several

several Hostilities already committed, the League made amongst their Cantons, and their Alliance with the *English* and the *Dutch*, all these Things at length engaged Monsieur *de Frontenac*, the Governor, to resolve to make them feel the Weight of the Arms of *France*, as so many Allies leagued against her at that Time felt them in *Europe*. All the Companies in the King's Pay had Orders to assemble at *Montreal*. The Desire of revenging themselves upon the *Iroquese*, and driving farther from them such dangerous Neighbours, having made all the *French*, established upon their Frontiers, join themselves to these Troops, together with those Savages who were attached to *France*; Monsieur *de Frontenac* found himself in a Condition to enter their Country at the Head of an Army, numerous and formidable for those Parts, since it consisted of near three thousand Men.

It was with great Difficulty that they conveyed the Artillery as far as the Fort, which the *English* had caused these Savages to erect. It was flanked with good Bastions, and so regular, that it
would

would have stopped us for a considerable Time, if they had had the Courage to keep themselves confined in it; but the *Iroquefe*, as valiant as they are, will always in their Combats have their Way free behind them, and accustom themselves much more to Actions of Address and Surprize, than to stand their Ground courageously. They abandoned their Fort, therefore, against the Opinion of the *English*, with whom they retired, leaving us at full Liberty to ravage their Canton. We began by razing the Fort, after which all was pillaged or destroy'd in a large Extent of Ground, to give these People at least a Defart to pass through before they could enter *New-France*.

The Body of Troops in which I was, with several Volunteers, who had followed me in this Expedition, having discovered in a Wood a large Habitation of *Iroquefe*, invested it, and soon made themselves Masters of it. We surpriz'd there a great Number of old Men and Children, and we divided the Booty. As to me, I yielded up my Share, and those which my Associates were to have,
in

in the Furs and the Utenfils which had been brought there, as in a Place of Safety. I contented myself with taking upon my Account all the Prisoners whom nobody would trouble themselves with. I surprized my Fellow-Soldiers extremely by this, and still more when I offer'd them all their Liberty, provided each of them would give me for their Ransom a Male Child of four or five Years old ; this procured me near two hundred, which were concealed near the Place. After which I sent away, without any Ransom, the Remainder of my Captives, reserving only half a Dozen of the Women, whom I kept to take Care of my little Flock.

You know, *Monfieur de Beauchene*, continued *Monneville*, addreffing himself to me, that two Days after I was very near having them all carried off from me, and losing the Lives of all my Volunteers, together with my own. You must remember it, since you were with the Savages who stole by Night upon my Quarters, which I had been so imprudent to chuse at too great a Distance from the Body of the Army. If they had known that I
had

had not above sixty Men with me, they would not have retired as they did, after having killed some of them. You can still less forget that young and rash as you were then, you engaged yourself so far that it was impossible for you to regain the others, and that you remained my Prisoner.

This Accident made me hasten my Departure. I was glad also to leave the main Body of the Army, where my two hundred Children would have embarrassed me much more. When I had a sufficient Number of Canoes, I demanded Permission from Monsieur *de Frontenac* to depart, and he granted it to me very graciously, commanding me to be furnished with what was necessary for my little Prisoners, whom he piously believed, as well as the rest, I had carried off in order to their being educated in the Christian Religion, as the Missionary Chaplains in the Army reported. These good Fathers judged thus of my Intentions without considering that, to execute the Project which they gave me the Honour of, instead of a common Habitation

tation I should have stood in need of Houses and Revenues like theirs.

Tho' they exaggerated extremely the good Action which they imagined I had done, they did not express the least Desire to share in the Merit of it with me, by taking upon themselves the Care of Part of these Children; but they caused a sumptuous *Te Deum* to be sung at *Quebec*, as soon as they heard that I had ordered them all to be baptized, which in effect I did not fail to do, before I sent them to Mademoiselle *du Clos*, for whom I had destined them.

You will easily suppose, that this political *Sakgame* thought herself obliged to me for such a Present. She sent me Word, that I could not have made her one more valuable, and that her good Friends were penetrated with Gratitude for the Service that I had done them, by sending them what might one Day produce Warriors that would be of great Assistance to them; that all these Children had been adopted, and would soon believe they had found their real Parents in their adoptive Fathers. She added,
that

that she would cause them to be instructed in the Christian Religion, and she hoped that, after having been brought up as *Hurons*, they would not have Hearts less *French* than if they had been born in the Center of *France*.

The Favours that *Lewis XIV.* distributed at all Times in those Parts, penetrated even into our Desarts, to search out those of his Subjects who had distinguished themselves there. Amongst the Persons who received these Gratifications was comprehended a Lady of my Acquaintance, named *de Vercheres*. This Heroine had an Habitation and a Fort, which bore her Name, some Leagues distant from *Montreal*; she was the Daughter of a Mother who had taught her to use the Musket, and to place herself, like an *Amazon*, at the Head of her People, upon any Incurfion of the Savages. One Day having been surprized by a Troop of *Iroquefe*, she escaped from their Hands, and shut herself up in her little Fort, where, assisted by one single Soldier only, she stopped them with Musket-shot at first, after which firing off her Cannon herself upon them, she

she obliged these Savages to retire, which they did with the more Precipitation, as they imagined she would soon receive Assistance. This young Female Warrior, after the Action, having had the good Fortune to have an Opportunity of writing to Madame *du Pontchartrain*, sent her a Detail of the little Siege she had supported, and obtained by her Mediation a Pension of four hundred Livres.

About that Time the young Man, who had accompanied me to the Habitation of Mademoiselle *du Clos*, returned thither again to offer her his Service, with five or six of his most intimate Friends, who were not at all terrified at the Relation he had given them of his former Journey. He, as well as his Companions, took care to conceal this pious Design from the World, easily judging that it would meet with no Approbation. I was the only Person to whom they did not make a Mystery of it, lest Mademoiselle *du Clos* should be displeased with them, for not bringing her a Message from me. They, therefore, made me a Confidante of their

VOL. II. F Design,

Design, and I charged them with a Letter to the *Sakgame*.

During their Voyage the *Malouin*, Commandant of our Fort, died of Poison. I have always been perswaded that the Blow which sunk him into the Grave was destined for me, in which Case I was a very innocent Cause of his Death: However that may be, I repaired immediately to *Quebec*, to give Information of this, and solicit a Post, for which I did not imagine I should find any Rivals; nevertheless the Governor told me politely, that if I insisted absolutely upon this Place he could not refuse it me; but that he desired me to wait till another Opportunity, and yield it up to a young Man who was strongly recommended to him, and who, if I did not, must lay upon his Hands. This obliging manner of Refusal charmed me; and I protested to the Governor, that being fully satisfied with his Favour, I desisted from my Demand, with as much Pleasure as I should have received the Benefit.

This young Man, of whom he spoke, was just then arrived on board the Vessel which

which had brought us the happy News of the Peace of *Ryswick*, of which we flattered ourselves to taste the Fruits in the New World, by that Liberty of Commerce which must augment our Fortunes. This Change made me think of profiting at least by the Succession of the *Malouin*, since I had not inherited his Place. He had neither Children nor Heirs; his Habitation would have been abandoned, and in a few Years could not have failed of becoming again a Desert as it was before. I demanded it, and it was granted me.

In a second Visit that I made the Governor, I represented to him the Plan of the Conduct of *Mademoiselle du Clos*, amongst the *Hurons*; he was never tired with hearing me speak upon that Article, and he admired the Prudence and the Policy of that incomparable Woman. He was enchanted with it; and imagined he perceived in her System, an Affair of so much Utility to the Nation, that he had the Generosity to send her Presents to above the Value of a hundred Pistoles, causing her to be assured, at the same Time, of a particular Protection

tection both for herself and her Canton. The Reverend Fathers of the Convent, jealous of their Honour, would not appear less generous than the Governor; they also made their Presents to the *Sakgame*, but to vary Things a little, they made their Gifts consist in several Reliques, and some consecrated Beads, with a Billet of Association unto the Merits of a Confraternity, in the Catalogue of which her Name was inserted gratis. The Badge of this Confraternity was carried by a young Man, whom they sent to her as a Missionary at my Request. They charged this new Apostle with magnificent sacerdotal Ornaments, and a very rich Service for a Chappel; but when I gave him his Lesson in private, I advised him not to make use of all this, till Mademoiselle *du Clos* judged it proper.

The Governor, when he charged me with the Care of conducting and installing in our little Fort Monsieur *de la Haye*, which was the Name of the new Commandant, told me, that he should think himself obliged to me for all that I should do for this young Man, who
was

was born, added he, to a better Fortune. I began, therefore, upon this Recommendation, to interest myself for Monsieur *de la Haye*; and Madame his Wife, who embarked with us, completed the attaching me to the Service of the Family. That Lady was a young Person, who, joined to the most regular Beauty, so affable an Air, so much Modesty, so much Sweetness in the Tone of her Voice, in her Eyes, in her Manner, that, borne away by that powerful *Je ne scay quoy*, which cannot be defined, I lost my Liberty in a Moment, without so much as wishing to preserve it.

If I had satisfied myself with the Friendship of this amiable Pair, the Affiduity and Complaisance I expressed to them acquired it me to such a Degree, that when we arrived at the Fort, you would have imagined that it was a Brother and a Sister coming to reside with a beloved Brother. As I had been gratified with all the Spoils of the *Malouin*, the Moveables belonged to me equally with the rest; and I might have left a naked Apartment to his Successor, but I did not remove the least Trifle, which

is not to be reckoned as any thing in such a Place. I was constantly doing them some little Services, which they testified the more Gratitude to me for, as they did not in the least suspect the Motive of my Actions; they imagining that I behaved thus to them out of real Generosity.

I carried them so frequently to the Habitation that I had inherited, that it was not more mine than it was theirs. They found it so handsomely built, and so well situated, that they were infinitely pleased with being there. As to me, I tasted less the Sweets of that Solitude, than the Pleasure of seeing continually in it the Object of my Passion. As long as I constrained myself to Looks and Sighs only, *Madame de la Haye* did not penetrate into my Sentiments. She was so far from imagining me in love with her, that she gave me continually, without Constraint, many innocent Marks of the tender Friendship she had for me: On the other Side, however jealous I was of her Husband, I lived in so strict an Intimacy with him, that the Consideration of that alone had often closed
my

my Lips, when the Secret was ready to escape me.

Monsieur *de la Haye*, for he had related his Adventures to me, was the Son of a rich Counsellor of the Parliament of *Paris*, who designing him for the Bar, had educated him with that Intention; but the young Man applied himself so little to his Studies, and particularly to that of the Law, that when he was to undergo his Examination, his Examiners were obliged to make him sustain his *Thesis's* in great Privacy. His Father seeing he had so little Disposition to shine in the long Robe, changed his Design, and bought him a Post in the Household, which afterwards occasioned his Misfortunes.

I was ignorant what these Misfortunes were, he having concealed them from me in all the Conversations that we had had together, and had never yet spoke to me of his Wife, when one Morning walking out after Breakfast, the Fumes of two Bottles of White-Wine, which we had drank, had the same Effect upon him as the Rays of the Sun had upon

the Statue of *Memnon*: Monsieur *de la Haye*, who was generally silent and melancholly, put on a gay Air, free and open, and had a great deal to say. As soon as I perceived he was in a Vein of talking, I put him upon the Chapter of his former Prosperity, and told him that I could not think him wholly unfortunate, since Fortune had bestowed upon him so accomplished a Wife as *Madame de la Haye*.

You would think my Wife still more amiable, replied he, if you knew all the Reasons I have to love and to esteem her. As next to her, I have nothing in the World so dear to me as you, I will make you my Confidante. It will hurt my Self-love to discover to you those Defects which the Situation I am now in conceals from you; but 'tis no matter, I will tell you all; 'tis a Confusion that I well deserve.

By the Reputation of being the only Son of an opulent Father, continued he, I had found the means of being in Debt above ten thousand Crowns before I was twenty, when an Uncle, whom I
had

had in the Household, engaged my Father to let me quit the Gown, and be placed with him. The Post that they were in Treaty for cost them near fifty thousand Livres for me. What a Lure to my Creditors! the Strings of their usurious Purfes were broke by it; they were always open to me; I took out, and left them to count it. Of fifty young People, who like me could find Money with more Ease than the King, I was the most respected, and the soonest served. 'Tis true, they made me sign and renew my Bonds when they pleased; but tho' they took these Precautions, I saw plainly that they had a particular Affection for me, and that they would not hazard so much with the rest, from whom frequently they exacted Pledges very unpolitely.

A Succession of near two hundred thousand Livres, which my Father by his Death left us soon after, that is, to them and me, for I did not owe them at the most above the Half of it, augmented their Hopes, and the Disorders of my Conduct. My Uncle frequently reproached me with it in vain; tho' I

was sensible that I deserved his Reproaches I had not Resolution enough to change. My Felicity, or rather my Stupidity, ruined me ; I loved Wine and the Pleasures of the Table ; twenty Parasites devoured me ; with all this I played high, and thinking to pass for a fair Gamester, I played like a Dupe. My Uncle, advertised of my Excesses, gave me new Reprimands, which were still in vain. He grew tired of repeating them, and to frustrate me of his Succession, he resolved to marry, with an Intention of having an Heir more worthy of him.

It was, however, upon this Succession that my Creditors depended the most ; they looked upon it as a Supplement to my Fortune, which might some time be necessary to them. They knew better what my Estate was than I did ; for I left to them the Care of calculating my Revenues and my Debts. To compleat the Picture of my Disorders, I thought those too sober and regular who kept a Mistress to themselves ; this Conduct appeared too sedate to me, and too conformable to the tiresome Uniformity of

of Marriage. In fine, I was as great a Debauchee as it was possible to be, when there happened to me an Event of which my Marriage was the Consequence, and which I am going to relate to you.

I had had for some few Days a Valet de Chambre, who having never served before, piqued himself upon a Fidelity which most of those Gentlemen shake off by degrees when they are in Service. He advertised me one Day, that one of my Footmen in whom I had a Confidence robbed me, and was in Confederacy with the Cook. *Jasmin*, added he, goes out every Night after Supper, and carries something to a Place that I have remarked. To be satisfied myself of the Truth of this Fact, I hid myself one Evening in the Staircase of a House into which my Valet de Chambre assured me that the Thefts were carried. The accused Footman in effect came thither loaded with a Parcel, passed close by me without seeing me, and entered into a Garret, whither I followed him hastily. Rascal, said I to him, drawing my Sword, dost thou rob me then in this Manner? The unhappy Wretch threw himself

himself immediately at my Feet ; Strike, Monsieur, said he to me, you will pierce us all three with the same Blow. At the same time he pointed with his Finger to a young Woman whom Fear had rendered immoveable, and an old Man sunk with Infirmitates.

It is only, pursued the Footman, opening the Napkin which he brought, the Refuse of the Provisions of your Domesticks : With these I prolong the Days of my Father, who has this only Succour left to subsist upon ; and yet though these Remainders are wretched, I buy them dearly of your Cook, to whom on this Account I have yielded up my Wages above a Year. The Father on his Side, whose Tongue was the only Part at liberty, begged for Mercy ; but there was no longer any occasion to have recourse to their Prayers to move me ; what I saw there disarmed me and inspired me with Compassion. I approached the old Man, and asked him why he did not demand a Place in the Hospital, rather than remain in the miserable Condition he was in. I have frequently designed to take
that

that Resolution, replied he, but my Children have always opposed it ; they are terrified at the very Name of the Place.-

Whilst I spoke to the poor old Man, his Son made his Escape, and his Daughter concealed herself. Be comforted, said I, to the Father, I approve of what your Son has done, and far from turning him out of my Family, I will double his Wages. To render these Words more efficacious, I accompanied them with two or three Pistoles, and all the Silver I had about me. I intended at my Return home to reassure *Jasmin*, who not knowing what I had said to his Father, nor what Resolution I had taken, was in great Inquietude. Unhappily for him the Valet de Chambre seeing him come in, and imagining he gave him good Advice, told him to make his Escape immediately to avoid falling into the Hands of Justice, to which perhaps I might deliver him up ; this distracted the Mind of the Footman to such a Degree that he disappeared, and has never since been heard of.

His

His Flight disturbed his Father, who sent his Daughter several times to enquire in my Family if they had not heard of *Jasmin*. One Day having addressed herself to me in particular to ask that Question, though she was covered with Rags almost, she dazzled me with her Beauty. I was so excessively struck with it, that forgetting the generous Motives which till then had determined me to do them Service, I proposed Conditions to this unhappy Innocent, that might deliver her and the Author of her Birth from Misery : It was thus that I made even Actions of Humanity subservient to my Vices.

This virtuous Maid appeared to me very far from ever coming into my Designs. As to the Father, I found him more easy ; either that he was touched by my engaging Behaviour to them, or that the Fear of falling into a dreadful Indigence did not permit him to be untractable, he yielded to my Entreaties ; but we both of us found it no small Difficulty to seduce the Daughter. I say both of us, for he was obliged to make use of Statagems to persuade her. He
assured

assured her, that I had given him my Word of Honour that I would marry her publickly as soon as the Thing was possible - which I durst not, he said, do - for fear of displeasing an Uncle, whose Heir I was to be. Whilst he spared no Pains to induce her to consent to her Dishonour, I seconded him by the Expences bestowed upon them. I hired and furnished an Apartment for them, and gave them a Servant. At length, by the continual Sollicitations of the Father and myself, the Daughter yielded to our Entreaties.

What had determined her more than all the rest to yield to my Perswasion, was, that judging by my Procedure to her that I was too honest a Man to deceive her, she imagined that my Attachment for her would never finish but with my Life. In less than a Fortnight she was easy in her Situation, and the Father satisfied with his Fate, no longer remembered he had been miserable. He did not long enjoy his base Prosperity, he fell ill and died, recommending his Daughter to my Care.

His

His Death delivered me from a heavy Burthen. His Daughter gave herself entirely up to the Love, she had conceived for me, fully satisfied with the Esteem and Friendship that I could not refuse to the real Merit I remarked in her. She seemed pleased with her Condition, though after the Promises I had made her, she had a Right to hope for a higher Situation. Never Life was more retired than her's; never Woman appeared less to love the World. I could not persuade her to appear at the Plays, or in any publick Places; she even begg'd me not to visit her but in private. Very far from resembling those who never have Lovers in a Situation of being expensive for them, without making a kind of Triumph of their Infamy.

Out of entire Complaisance to me she condescended to learn Musick and Dancing; but she employed the greatest Part of her Time in reading. Her Conduct, her valuable Qualities, ought to have rous'd me out of my Debauchery, and fixed me entirely. She had also another Virtue that charmed me, which
was

was her Disinterestedness. She never desired any Thing of me. But, indeed, I prevented her Necessities and her Desires, for I seldom saw her without making her a Present ; sometimes I brought her a Gold Watch, or a Snuff-box ; sometimes a Ring, or a Necklace ; and when I happened to win fifty or sixty Pistoles at Play, I obliged her to share them with me. 'Tis my Play-Money, said I to her, if you don't take them, I shall lose them To-morrow ; and I had rather you had them than another. But generally she would not accept of any Thing from me, unless I would promise her to not to play for such a Number of Days, and not to frequent the wretched Company that ruined me.

I should not have been in *Canada* if I would have believed her, and a sincere Friend whom I sometimes carried to sup with her, and who, on his Part, often exhorted me to change my Conduct. When I engaged myself in loose Parties of Pleasure, and was two or three Days without seeing her, I threw her into dreadful Inquietudes ; and if I had the least Indisposition, she melted
into

into Tears, as if her Life had been attached to mine.

I soon gave her very different Alarms, when one Day heated by Wine, and almost under the Eyes of the King, there happened to me a Misfortune which Shame prevents me from relating to you. *Louis* the XIVth never forgave a Crime occasioned by Drunkenness. I was obliged to disappear, that I might not finish my Days upon a Scaffold; and notwithstanding the Credit of my Uncle, and that of all my Friends, I did not obtain my Pardon but with the Loss of my Post. Besides that, I was condemned to give ten thousand Livres to the *Hôtel Dieu*. This Affair rous'd my Creditors, they all knew each other; they had soon made a Computation of my Effects, and the first Resolution that was taken in the Assembly, was not to lend me any more, that they might not augment my Debts. Being informed in a Fortnight or three Weeks after this that my Uncle was to be married, they judged, by this precipitate Resolution, that he abandoned me. They declared themselves openly, and joined with the
Ad-

Administrators of the *Hôtel Dieu*. This was what my Friend writ me Word of to the Place of my Retreat. He added in his Letter, that he had been to wait upon my Uncle, who said to him, shewing him his Marriage Articles, You see this, Monsieur, this is a Proof that I shall no longer acknowledge, as my Nephew, a Wretch, whom I would have arrested upon the Spot, if I had known where he was ; and whom I would willingly suffer to perish in a Dungeon, that he might expiate the Ignominy with which he has covered the Family.

My Friend not being in a Situation to procure the ten thousand *Francks* that were necessary for me, could not prevent my Estate from being seized upon and sold ; and exclusive of this, I stood in need of four and twenty thousand *Livres* to satisfy my Creditors. At least now I had nothing left ; if I had had nothing to fear, I should perhaps have subdued my Pride so far as to seek for a Resource in *Paris*, where I knew so many People who called themselves my Friends ; but I should have made that humbling Step in vain, since my Friend
sent

sent me Word that he had seen them all, and that far from being disposed to raise me out of the Abyſs into which moſt of them had helped to plunge me, they ſcarce ſeemed to remember me. The only Perſon who intereſts herſelf in your Fate, added he, is her with whom we have ſometimes ſupp'd together. She comes every Day to enquire after you. She preſſes me ſtrongly to give her your *Adreſſe* ; which I have not thought proper to do, leſt ſhe ſhould be employed by your Enemies. All that her Tears, true or falſe, have been able to obtain of me, is a Promise to convey a Billet from her to you.

In effect, he ſent me one, and told me that he believed her Love was ſincere ; but that it was not now a Time for tender Sighs, and that I ſhould be embarraſſed enough with myſelf, without burthening myſelf with the Care of a faithful Miſtreſs. I was of his Opinion, and I began to forget her, as I imagined ſhe could no longer think of me ; and yet the more I read her Letter, the more ſhe appeared worthy of my Attention. I remember ſtill perfectly well the Con-
tents

“tents of it : — “ I can no longer live
“ without seeing you, said she ; if you
“ don’t permit me to come to you, I
“ shall go immediately in search of you
“ to all the Frontier Towns. It is not
“ so much for my own Satisfaction that
“ I demand this Favour of you, as for
“ your own Interest. The Misfortunes
“ which separate us from each other
“ may be terminated. If I can but see
“ you, perhaps I may be of Consola-
“ tion to you. We sometimes receive
“ Assistance from those where we least
“ expect it. Represent to yourself my
“ Father when he was expiring, and
“ do not forget that you protested to
“ him, that you would never abandon
“ me. I have lost every Thing since I
“ was your’s. I have nothing dear to
“ me in the World but you. What is
“ it to me in what Condition I find you
“ again ! It was you and not your For-
“ tune that I loved. Consider that I
“ am your’s, as steadily, as if all Laws,
“ divine and human, had laid upon me
“ the Necessity of sharing your Fortune
“ and your Name. Adieu, I shall de-
“ part, when you please, to rejoin you
“ where-

“ wherever you command me to re-
“ pair.”

Before I had received this Letter, the Uneasiness I felt in my Exile, and the Want of Money which began to come upon me, had already inspired me with a Desire of making a Tour secretly to *Paris*. I could no longer resist it after I had read this Billet, tho' it gave me no positive Assurances. I departed privately from the Place where I was, and by Night came to the House of my Friend, who was surprized to see me. I hazarded myself indeed greatly, but the Unfortunate have little Fears of Danger. My Friend immediately sent to let my Mistress know that he had something to deliver to her ; she flew thither immediately, and finding me, instead of a Letter which she had hoped for, the Excess of her Joy had almost proved fatal to her. She did not waste Time in testifying the Pleasure that my Presence gave her, she only informed herself of my Health, and then desired me and my Friend to follow her home, saying, that
she

she hoped we should not be sorry for being at that Trouble.

When we were entered into a little Chamber, where she inhabited, for she had let out her Apartment, to save all she could, she shewed us a strong Box, which she opened, and in which there was a large Quantity of Gold, with all the Toys that I had given her. Monsieur, said she, addressing herself to me, all this belongs to you; give me Leave to restore it to you. Penetrated with this Action, I looked entirely speechless, not upon the Treasure, but the generous Woman that offered it to me. Then throwing herself into my Arms, You would have been much richer, cried she, if I had been as ready to receive as you was to give. How I reproach myself now for my mistaken Delicacy! Why was not I more rapacious! I should have had in my Hands a considerable Part of the Riches that have been forced from you.

God forbid, replied I, that I should accept what you offer me with so much Frankness! No, my dear Child, you
deserve

deserve them more than I, and I would give my Life to preserve them for you. And I mine, replied she, to be able once more to re-establish you in the Situation that I have seen you. — What a Scene! then cried my Friend. Happy are they that feel a Change of Fortune thus rewarded! Thou hast lost nothing, added he, turning to me, since thou possessest the Heart of so uncommon a Woman.

After a long Debate of Tenderneſs and Generoſity between us, What do you reſolve upon doing? ſaid my Friend to us at length. You muſt, replied ſhe, with this Sum endeavour to appeaſe his Creditors, or elſe let him take it, and retire into a Place of Safety. I ſhall die if he leaves me, but I dare not intreat him to take me with him, it would be too great an Inconvenience to him. Can you think thus, ſaid I to her? No, nothing but Death can ever part us now, ſince your Tenderneſs is Proof againſt my Miſfortunes.

My Friend interrupted us once more, to tell us, that he was of Opinion that I
ſhould

should remain there concealed whilst he treated with my Creditors, and made them Offers, which I agreed to. He saw them every one in particular, and had soon disposed them to an Accommodation. 'Tis easy to enter into an Agreement with those who think they have lost all. I was upon the Brink of finding myself at Liberty, when a new Misfortune deprived us of this last Hope. A Footman of my Friend's, guessing that there were Things of Value in the strong Box, laid his Scheme so well, that he got the Key of his Master's Closet in the Night, and carried off the Box.

What a Stroke of Thunder to my Friend, when he perceived it the next Day ! He flew immediately to the Ministers of Justice, all the Archers were sent abroad, and several Spies in the City, after the Traces of the Villain, who was taken in a Fortnight, and hanged at his Master's Door, after having confessed the Fact. This was all the Consolation that we received, for the strong Box remained in the Hands of Justice, with all that it contained.

It is not easy to guess at our Despair, and particularly that of my Friend; we were ourselves obliged to give him Consolation. The amiable Woman, whose Loss it was most properly, seemed to be the least afflicted with it, and exhorted me to be patient. You see, said I to her one Day, what must be the Reward of your Tenderness, why will not you abandon me to my evil Destiny? You had wherewith to subsist, you ought to have forgot me. I ought to have assisted you, replied she, but I can now only do it with my Care. Let us depart with the little we have left. Let us quit a Country where your Liberty is in Danger. You make no Answer, pursued she, remarking that I was lost in Thought. You are absent, I see plainly that you wish to leave me; but you shall not succeed in it, for I will follow wherever you go. I shall be a Shadow attached to your Steps. You have made me happy as long as you was so yourself, it is just that I should now share in your Afflictions.

You shall share them still if you dare, said I to her, when you know to what
Dangers

Dangers you must expose yourself to follow me; I quit not only *France*, but even *Europe*. An antient Friend of my Father's has been with me in private; he has advised me to go over into *America*, and has given me a Letter of Recommendation to have an Employment there. Is this a Voyage that you can undertake? Is that a Climate suitable to you? Besides, why should I banish you from your Country, to expose you to a thousand Dangers incident to so long a Voyage? I know no Danger but that of losing you, cried she, and once more I am resolved to follow you wherever you go. It shall be then as a Wife, replied I, moved at her Constancy; that Title alone can determine me to continue to associate you to my Fortune. This faithful Lover, who looked upon it as the greatest Blessing that could happen to her, did not oppose it. I married her then, and we departed for this Country under the Names we now bear.

Oh Heavens! cried I, when he had ceased to speak, What, was it the History of *Madame de la Haye* that I have heard in listening to your's! Yes, replied he,

'tis her's that I have now related to you. I have described her Conduct to this Day; and you must have remarked with what Assiduity she endeavours to do every Thing that can give me Pleasure. She does all that is possible to dissipate my Chagrin, for she is not naturally so gay as she appears to you when she is with me. I am penetrated with her Complaisance; I protest to you, that if I wish a happier Destiny, it is solely that I may reward her Goodness.

Who would believe, that, after having heard this Relation, I should not have respected the Virtue of such a Woman! I had a hundred Times more Esteem for her, but unhappily my Love increased with my Esteem. I immediately yielded up to this happy Pair the Habitation which was so agreeable to them, and shortly procured them the Ratification of it from *Quebec*. Why had not I stopped there? The Pleasure of doing them Service, and of being tenderly beloved by them both, would have been sufficient to a Heart more virtuous than mine. What a strange Fatality! I could
not

not be satisfied without being criminal. I thought of nothing now but *Madame de la Haye*, and lived only for her. I could have wished she would love me more than she did her Husband. I sometimes flattered myself with that Hope, as if it had been possible that she should cease to be faithful to him, after all those Marks of Tendernefs she had given him.

I was continually with this Lady ; and her Husband, far from being displeased with it, thanked me very sincerely for my Complaisance in keeping her Company. When I found myself alone with her, I fell into the most visible Transports, in which I made Exclamations upon the Felicity of her Husband, and with all this I gave myself up to a dreadful Melancholly that consumed me. *Mademoiselle de la Haye* at length penetrated my Sentiments, and the Knowledge of them afflicted her. I perceived it, by the Care she took to fly me, whenever Chance occasioned our being alone together.

In one of these Moments, feigning to be indisposed, she made some Steps to retire, but I prevented her: No, Madame, said I to her, you have no other Indisposition but that which my Presence gives you. Stay, 'tis I only that ought to go. After this, looking tenderly upon her, You have discovered then, continued I, this unhappy Love which will soon cause my Death, since it displeases you. Yes, I have remarked it, replied she, and I must also have given you Reason to think that I was not ignorant of it, by the Change of my Behaviour to you. We began to taste the Pleasures of Repose in this agreeable Solitude, why will you disturb a Tranquility, which we in Part owe to your Favour? You ought rather to preserve your own Work; your Friendship else was only a Snare, into which I fell by paying it with mine.

Ah! Madame, said I to her, can Friendship ever repay a Love so ardent as this, that you receive the Confession of so cruelly? Yet this Love, so violent as it is, has long evaded your Penetration; and the Efforts that I have used
to

to conceal it till now, proves that it is less rash than innocent. What do you dare to say, interrupted she? can you call your Passion innocent? my Friendship itself will soon cease to be so, if you don't change your Language, and stifle a Passion which makes me already feel all the Horrors of an Exile that your Generosity made us think supportable. Take again your Benefits, remain here alone, and restore me the Right of looking upon you with Indifference. I have not yet forgot how to live in the most obscure Retreat, and our Residence in the Fort will not be more so than I desire.

If you deprive me of your Presence, cried I, command my Fate then. What will become of me? The least Absence, said she, will cure you. Seek not after me when I avoid you; or rather quit the Place. Leave us for some Time, but let me beg you would not let Monsieur *de la Haye* perceive the Motive of your Absence; spare him the Despair that the Knowledge of this would give him. At length, overcome by her Reasons,

G 4

sons, and moved by her Tears, I promised that I would depart from her, and even forget her, if that was possible for me to do. She appeared satisfied with this Promise, and on my Side, to convince her that I knew no other Law but her Will, I disposed myself to bid her a long Farewell.

I was upon my Knees before her, and held one of her Hands, which I moisten'd with my Tears, when, unhappily for us, *Monsieur de la Haye* entered abruptly into the Room where this Scene passed, and surprizing me in that Attitude, he consulted only his Fury, and flew upon me with his Sword drawn, with so much Precipitation, that I had scarce Time to put myself in a Posture of Defence. However, I was soon upon my Guard, and I may say, that if I had not spared him, I should have had an easy Conquest over him; but I only parried his Thrusts, which he made at me with more Vivacity than Skill.

What was most unhappy in the Combat was, that *Madame de la Haye*, throw-
ing

ing herself inconsiderately between us, got a slight Wound, and was the Occasion of my receiving a dangerous one. Then the Husband becoming less furious, was willing to listen to her. She informed him, that being as faithful a Friend as she was a faithful Wife, I was banishing myself from their Retreat, and that it was in taking Leave of her that I had thrown myself at her Knees. Upon this Relation the Husband, passing from Anger to Compassion, felt a mortal Regret at having wounded me. He sent immediately for the Surgeon, who never left me till I was entirely out of Danger, and in a Condition to go out. He even accompanied me to my own Habitation, whither I retired.

My Health was sooner re-established than the Tranquility of my Heart; for I learnt, during the Time of my Recovery, that the Wound which Madame *de la Haye* had received in her Side, and which she had neglected, not thinking it of any Consequence, was become very dangerous, and soon after I was informed of the Death of that Lady. I

thought I should have lost my Reason at this News. I did a thousand Extravagancies ; I called myself her Assassin, and would have taken away my own Life, and should inevitably have done so, if they had left me alone, or had not taken Care to preserve me from myself.

The most violent Sorrows are not of the longest Continuance ; Time moderated mine, and I thought only of quitting a Country which could no longer be agreeable to me. I found an Occasion to do this : Monsieur *de la Potterie*, Comptroller of the Marine, charged with the Inspection of the Fortifications of *New-France*, came at that Time to view my little Fort in his Rounds. I desired him to put some other Person in the Post that I occupied, whilst I went to *Quebec* to demand a Permission to retire. He did so very obligingly. Immediately I sold all that I possessed in the Country, and repaired to *Quebec*, to seize upon the first Opportunity that offered to return into *France*. The *Recolet*, my Patron, did all that was possible
to

the Chevalier de Beauchene. 131

to detain me, but he only could persuade me to stay the Time that was requisite for selling a large Quantity of Skins, which I had remaining in that Place.

The End of the FOURTH BOOK.



THE



THE
ADVENTURES
OF THE
Chevalier de Beauchene.

The Continuation of the History
of the Count DE MONNEVILLE.

B O O K V.

Monneville *returns into France. He goes to Paris, where he falls into an Intimacy with several young Debauchees, amongst whom, by Accident, he meets with the Chevalier, Brother to Mademoiselle du Clos. He makes an Acquaintance with that young Man,*
and

and gives him News of his Sister. They become the best Friends in the World. Monneville leaves him to take a Journey to Mesnil, where he was brought up in his Infancy, in order to see his Nurse, and endeavour to draw from her some Light concerning her Birth. He buys the Estate of the Count de Monneville, his Father. He goes to the Castle of Mesnil, where he sees the Baronness and Lucilia, and after several Conversations with these Ladies, there is a mutual Discovery made. The Baronness informs him that he is her Son. He marries Lucilia. The Chevalier comes to his Nuptials, which are no sooner celebrated, than those two Gentlemen prepare for their Departure to Canada, in order to find out Mademoiselle du Clos. They arrive at Quebec, and go to Montreal; where, after a thousand Enquiries and Researches, they learn that the Sackage of the Hurons has lost her Life, to the great Regret of those faithful Savages. At length, Monneville and his Friend having re-embarked to return into France, are attacked and taken by the English, who carry them
to -

to Boston, in New-England. There they are sold as Slaves to a Captain, who buys them to sell again; but Beauchene and his Companions meet the Vessel of that Officer, make themselves Masters of it, and by that Montneville and the Chevalier are delivered from Slavery.



AT my Departure from *Quebec*, I found myself worth above a hundred thousand *Livres*, which contributed much to my Consolation; especially when I saw myself at *Paris*, in a Condition to make a Figure suitable to my little Ambition. I owed this Fortune, indeed, in strictness to the *Maltotier*; but as he had no View of procuring it for me when he banished me so far, I sought him out immediately, that I might revenge my ancient Quarrel; but the King of his Goodness had prevented me. I learn'd that my Enemy had been in Prison for several Years*, without having any Hopes of leaving it.

My

My Design was after this to go and search out my Nurse, and see what was become of my dear *Lucilia* ; but as I imagined her either dead or married, which to me was much the same Thing, I was in no great Haste to make my Journey. Besides, I was detained at *Paris* by Amusements, which during the Course of the Winter made me run through a Part of the Produce of my Furs. 'Tis true, I lived with Sons of Mirth, who spent still more liberally than myself ; when it cost me the Skin of a Castor, their Share was an Acre of a Vineyard or a Meadow. Our Society, which gave us a great Reputation in the World, sometimes joined itself to another which was not less famous, and which was called the * *Coterie Royale*, because it was formed near the Place which bears that Name. Woe to the Taverns where we assembled ! we paid generously for the Expences of our Table, but we made a dreadful Destruction among their Moveables.

The

* What the *French* call *Coterie*, is in the Nature of a Club.

The two *Coteries* were joined one Day at a celebrated House. It was the *Royale* that was to bear the Expence. They complimented extremely a young Man who was in Mourning, and who was at the Table almost opposite to me. They endeavoured to perswade him, that he was in Conscience obliged to give a Treat at his own Expence to the whole Company, by way of Thanksgiving for the unparallel'd Blessing that had just happened to him. This Animal here, said one of them, is not he a lucky Wretch? He had but one Brother, who was his eldest, and Heaven has delivered him from him about five Months since; and his Father, who might have lived these thirty Years, drank himself to death last Week. Gentlemen, said another, when a Father is so gracious as to do so, I look upon it as one of the most meritorious Actions of his Life. Mine puts it off as long as ever he can, I am afraid the Mode of Weepers will be over, before I shall wear them; and yet they are a very becoming Ornament. Observe, Gentlemen, how graceful they make a young Man look. What sayest thou to them, Chevalier? Chevalier
yourself

yourself, replied he abruptly who was in Mourning. I hate the Name. I have borne it but too long already. The good Man, Heaven rest his Soul, would never have called me otherwise, if my Brother had not been so good as to go to the Devil.

Thou art thoroughly comforted for this double Loss, I suppose, said another. Canst thou make a Doubt of it, replied the Chevalier? I should be a great Fool to afflict myself for the Death of my two greatest Enemies. No, no, Gentlemen, my Sorrow is all upon my Sleeves. I am willing, however, to acknowledge the Service they have done me, by making a solemn one for them, where we will drink their Healths in full Glasses, and give a Loose to our Sorrows, till we fall senseless under the Table. This we are at, said another, is very proper to serve us for a *Mausoleum*. If you approve of it, I will pronounce the Funeral Oration. Nothing shall be forgot. I was thoroughly acquainted with both the Heroes. I know all the Scandal that can be said of them; and if thou wilt, I'll join to this the Elogium
of

of thy Mother, who has all the Air of not going much further in her Course.

At least, returned the Chevalier, it will not be the Sorrow of having lost her Husband that will suffocate her. She was not less tired of him than I was of the whole Family. As affectionate a Consort as *Artemisia*, she had long wish'd to have the Ashes of her Husband in an Urn, though she had been obliged to swallow them. This Day Week then, Gentlemen, pursued he, in eight Days we shall celebrate here the Service of my deceased Relations: But remember this, that none shall enter without Weepers. Let every one likewise make a Provision of Handkerchiefs, for I advertise you, that the Ceremony will be very deplorable.

I laughed with the rest at this foolish Scene, when he who sat next to me thought proper to relate to me all the ill Treatment that the Chevalier had received from his Family. This young Man, said he, if his eldest Brother had not died, would perhaps have had the same Fate as his Sister, who disappeared sud-

suddenly, and who they say is dead, though perhaps she may be far from it. At these last Words I looked upon the Chevalier with Attention, and the more I considered him, the more I found he resembled *Mademoiselle du Clos*. I afterwards made some Questions to my Neighbour, and his Answers turned my Doubts into Certitude. This Chevalier, said I within myself, is certainly the Brother of the *Sakgame*. Before we parted I approached him, and desired him to grant me an Hour's Conversation the next Morning at his House. I would prevent your Visit, said he to me; but I rather chuse to wait for you at home, because I am to give a Breakfast to some of my Friends, and you shall be one of the Party.

I went to him the next Day about Ten in the Morning; he was then in Bed, and there was at his Bed's-head an old Lady, who immediately quitted her Place to me, and withdrew. This is she, said he in a kind of Whisper, this is that tender Mother that was spoke of Yesterday so advantageously before you; she never fails to come every Morning
and

and inform herself of the State of my Health: She would not behave so complaisantly to me, if my eldest Brother was still alive. Before his Death, this Care, this Attention was only for him; her Tendernefs for me, as you see, is of no very ancient Date.

Have you always, said I, been the sole Object of her Indifference? Would to God it had been so, replied he, I should not then have lost a Sister, whom I have long lamented; and still lament every time that I recall her to my Remembrance. But added he, sighing, let us change the Discourse; you came to breakfast here, and not to be fatigued with the tedious Recital of my Chagrins, and the Affairs of my Family. And yet, Monsieur, resumed I, I only desired Yesterday this Conversation I now have with you, that I might speak to you of this Sister, whose Loss is so sensible to you. I beg you would tell me in what Manner you were separated. Monsieur, replied he, without informing myself what Interest you may have in it, I am willing to satisfy your Curiosity upon that Head.

Equally

Equally hated by our Parents, my Sister and myself, continued he, we were banished from the Paternal House; I was shut up in a College of Monks, from whence I was not delivered till after the Death of my Brother; and my Sister was sent to I know not what Convent, where she never arrived, since she was unfortunately killed by the Way, together with an old Domestick who conducted her. Is this Fact certainly true, interrupted I? It is but too much, returned the Chevalier. I remember to have heard my Father say, that he had indubitable Proofs of the Assassination of her Conductor. I believe, replied I, the Death of that Man very certain; but, perhaps, there may be Reasons for you to doubt of that of your Sister. No, no, resumed he, I cannot flatter myself that she is still living. If she was, would she have kept so long a Silence? Besides, it is most likely she met with the same Treatment as her Guide. And this Guide, said I to him, was not he called *du Clos*? Was not he your Governor? And in fine, were not you and your Sister banished from your Family

142 *The Adventures of*
mily for two Dogs, whom you designed
to poison?

Oh! Heavens! cried the Chevalier, there is none in the World but my Sister who knows that Circumstance, and you can have learn'd it from her only. In the Name of God, added he all in Emotion, what is become of this dear unhappy Sister? Where is she, Monsieur? Shall I see her once more? Yes, replied I, you may see her again; but it is not a Thing to be done so easily, nor so hastily. Upon this, I related to him the Misfortunes of *Margaret du Clos*, and the History of the new *Sakgame* of the *Hurons*. The Alternatives of Fortune of this beloved Sister, drew Tears from this young Man, sometimes of Joy, and sometimes of Sorrow. He trembled at the very Idea of the Miseries, to which she must have been exposed without my Assistance. The kind of Sovereignty, in which I afterwards represented her, gave him Consolation immediately. In fine, I kept this young Man, during two Hours, in a continual Succession of Joy and Sorrow, Pleasure and Pain.

When

When I had finished the giving him an Account of the Situation in which I had left his Sister, he gave a Loose to the most grateful Expressions; he made a thousand Protestations of Friendship; he exacted from me, that I should promise to take an Apartment with him, conjuring me to dispose of his Fortune as of my own; and, in a word, to assure him that we should never part. In the Impetuosity of his Tenderness for his Sister, he would have had us set out immediately to go to her, as if it had been only to take Post for a little Journey in *France*. But I told him, that it would be sufficient at first to give the *Sakgame* Advice of the Situation in which her Brother's Affairs were, and to invite her to come to *Paris*, and share with him in his Prosperity.

We had then to let the *Sakgame* know the Intentions of the Chevalier, which was not so easy to be perform'd; nevertheless, for fear of giving him Uneasiness, I did not make him sensible of all the Difficulties of it. We writ several Letters at the same Time, in hopes that they might not all prove fruitless. I
ad-

addressed one of the Convent of the Father *Recolets* at *Quebec*, another to a Merchant of *Montreal*, who traded with the *Hurons*, and a third to the Intendant of *Canada*, to whom the young Man had it recommended by Monsieur *de Barsieux*, who had an Affection for him. Whilst we waited for an Answer, he always called me his Brother, assuring me, that it should be my own Fault if I did not become so, and saying, that he could not live a Moment without me.

We went, at the Expiration of the Week, to celebrate the Feast which he had promised to give to his Friends, and of which he was to be at the sole Expence. I have never met with any Thing so entertaining as all this gay Society invented to do Honour to the Chevalier. The Panegyrick of his Father and of his Brother was a finished Piece; the most elegant and the best turned Irony was supported throughout the whole, and this comick Discourse was pronounced with the most admirable Gravity.

The

The Feast lasted almost the whole Night, and it would have been as amusing as it was extraordinary, if these young People could have kept themselves within the Bounds of Moderation, but after a thousand Extravagancies, full of Wit, a thousand entertaining Ceremonies, tho' most of them ridiculous enough, and filled with Imprecations against the stupid Custom of Children being made subject to their Parents, one of the most giddy of them happened to say, that there was an essential Part of the Ceremony wanting ; that they ought to have Women, who, by their lamentable Shrieks, might perform the Part of those antient *Roman* Females, who were paid for weeping at Funerals. Every one applauded so noble an Imagination ; and those who were acquainted with Ladies in the Neighbourhood suitable for the Purpose, went out to fetch them. They brought us three, who certainly did not in the least imagine they came there to weep. They took the Thing, however, very gallantly, and after they had been instructed in the extraordinary Service that was expected from them, and had drank some Bum-

pers of Champaign, to prevent them from sinking under the Sorrows that their Part demanded, these tractable Creatures began to make such Lamentations, and such dreadful Shrieks, that all the Street resounded with them.

Whatever Perswasions the Master of the House could use, two or three Brigades of the Watch, drawn by this deplorable Noise, would absolutely enter the House to see particularly what was passing there. They had not to do with People disposed to approve of their Curiosity; we disputed the Entrance with them; they made Head against us at first, but they soon gave way. We pursued them into the Street, where one of our Party, following his Victory too far, dropped down, pierced with two or three Balls, which he received in his Body.

The Host, who had suffered us to act all these Follies in his House, was thrown into Prison and ruined. As to our three artificial Weepers, they were sent to weep in earnest at the Hospital. From that Time our *Coteries* were entirely demolished.

molished ; we could never renew any of our sprightly Parties, nor even be half a Dozen of us together, without being examined, followed, and pointed at by the Populace ; for they reported marvellous Things of us : Some said, that our last Assembly was wholly composed of wretched Jews in Disguise, and that if the Watch had not forced in at the Shrieks of the Women who were shut up with us, those unfortunate Creatures would have been unbaptized. Others pretended that they were Sorcerers who kept their Sabbath there, and that we had resolved, by dreadful Storms, to ruin the rest of *France*, as we had lately done several of its Provinces, particularly the *Orleanois* and *Burgundy*.

They even named an Archer of great Credit, who through the Key-Hole had perceived several Devils, who having made us sign with our Blood these terrible Commissions, had flown away up the Chimney in the Shape of Owls, leaving the Room and the whole House full of a poisonous Smell of Sulphur and Burnings. They asserted also, that the Women who had been forced into our

Company, had betrayed us by their Cries, to revenge themselves for our having caused them to be abused by *Incubus's*, to the end that all the Women who were with Child at the same Time might perish ; and this Particularity was so little doubted of amongst the Populace, that it was said to have occasioned the celebrating a great Number of Masses at *Paris*, in order to avert the Calamity.

There was a *Cure* of *Normandy* who believed, and piously related it in his Lecture, that our Troop was the same who, the preceding Year, had held an Assembly of the same Kind in a Mill near *Muns*, during which Sabbath the Storm of Hail had almost destroyed the Town, without the falling of one Drop upon the Mill. He added, that a Woman who had been delivered up to the unclean Spirit by Force, was brought to bed soon after of a horrible Monster, who had four Arms furnished with Claws instead of Nails, and two horned Heads ; and, in effect, he held out a Letter to them, in which he was informed of all these Accidents, bating some few of the Circumstances ;
but

but it was no moderate Use of the Privilege of an Historian, at second Hand, to add nothing of his own, but the Sorcerers, the Horns, and the Claws.

I made use of the Interruption that this Affair gave to our Assemblies, to dissuade the Chevalier from them, whom I shall still call so, tho' he had lost that Name when he became the Head of an illustrious Family. These Sort of Routs did not at all please me, as to my own Particular, and that young Man was already but too irregular in his Conduct. He took the Advice very handsomely that I gave him upon this Head, and we confined ourselves to a few Friends, of whom he condescended to leave the Choice to me.

As to us two we were inseparable, one was scarce ever seen without the other. I was more the Master in his Family than he was himself. He would have every Thing be in common between us ; and, whether it was a Want of Delicacy, or whether it was an Excess of Friendship for me, he would willingly have included his Mistress amongst the

H 3

rest.

rest. 'Tis true, that being something tired of her whom he had, he seemed desirous to yield her up to me, and chuse one for himself of the first Rank ; which he could easily do then, with the great Fortune that he was become Master of by the Death of his Father ; and indeed a Mediatrix, who had taken upon herself the Care of finding him out a splendid Lady, soon procured him one of those Beauties in high Taste, who know how to ruin their Admirers in an elegant Manner, whilst they teach them how to make a Figure in the World. She had not Time, however, to do the Chevalier that Honour ; she dipped into his Purse for a few Days ; but having perceived that the Charms which he admired were merely artificial, he was disgusted with her, and came off with losing his Earnest only.

As I loved him sincerely, I advised him to quit this Course of Life, and think rather of a solid Establishment. I know, says he, you speak thus entirely for my Interest ; yet I must confess to you, that I have resolved never to enter into such an Engagement till I am turned

ed

ed of five and twenty, and I should say forty if I was not an only Son. However, before I determine absolutely, I will consult the old Baron; I am persuaded that he will think otherwise than you do upon that Article. I know the Baron perfectly, replied I, he is like the Rat who, having lost his Tail, would have persuaded all the other Animals of his Kind, that their Tails were only Inconveniencies to them, and that they ought to get rid of them. The Baron is one of the old Court; there can be no longer any tender Sentiments in him; he detests all Women of Honour, because they refuse the Homages and Addresses that he offered to their Mothers thirty Years before. Believe me, Venial Love is a Slave, whose Society will do you no Honour, and who ought never to be admitted to our Table, but, as it is at the Baron's, for want of other Guests. As to you, Chevalier, young, handsome, and well made as you are, you ought to live differently from him. You see how little he is esteemed with all his Libertine Maxims; if the Fathers, who despise him, forbid their Children to frequent him, he would reduce his

H 4 whole

whole Society to the Conversation of some old Debauchees as little valued as himself. He has Wit, I confess it, but his Wit is dangerous ; he is entertaining, but he is not the only one who is so. You are acquainted with People whose Company is not less agreeable, and whose Friendship you need not be ashamed of.

It is not taken amiss, added I, that a young Man of Fortune, in order to know the World, tastes a little of the Pleasures that it affords. 'Tis only expected from him that he should not abandon himself to them entirely, and that there should be some Distinction in the Choice he makes of them. The Pleasures of a common Soldier are not those of a Gentleman ; and yours ought to be different from those which are followed by them who have neither Birth nor Distinction in the World.

The Chevalier interrupted me in this Place. I am convinced, said he, spare yourself the Trouble of preaching any longer to me ; I am struck with your Reasons, only teach me how to put your useful Lessons in Practice ; I leave
you

you the Master of my Conduct. I do not desire so much of you, replied I; be persuaded only, that it is out of Friendship that I take the Liberty of speaking thus to you. I know it, returned the Chevalier, or else, added he smiling, I might have imagined you only exhorted me to Virtue that you might preserve to yourself the little *Brunette* that I have yielded up to you. He might, without any Fear of disoblighing me, rally upon this Article; he who had often reproached me, that I set no Value upon his Presents, since I would not attach myself to his little *Brunette*. However, this little Pleasantry was the Occasion of my ceasing entirely to visit that Woman, who was not very unfortunate by it, since she married the Steward of the Chevalier. This Domestick, tho' he was rich, had no Repugnance for such a Wife; he thought, perhaps, their Honesty was much the same; in every Thing else she was much his Superior; she was a little, gay, sprightly Nymph, always laughing, and who had always some entertaining Story to tell us.

One Day, as she was diverting us by the Recital of the heroic Actions of a Beauty, famous for her Gallantries, I asked her, if she had ever known *La Desmarets*, that Goddess of Love, to whom I was the *Adonis* when I was sent away to *Canada*. If I have known her! cried she: It was she who gave me the first Principles of Behaviour; if I have any Knowledge of the World, if I have any Education, it is her Work. Alas! the poor Creature would not have had so melancholly an End, if she had made use herself of the Advices she gave to me; but she thought she could never want any Thing, and neglected, as we say, to lay by any Thing for a rainy Day, and with this she had too good a Heart; she had no Regard for herself when it was to serve a Friend. If she had forgot you as easily as you Men can cast off us, she would not have undone herself upon your Account.

I beseech you, said I to her, explain to me how I could be so unhappy as to occasion the Misfortune of this obliging Woman. That is what I can inform you of, replied she, for I was with her
then,

then, and my Mother was her favourite Maid: Some Days before your Departure, if you remember, you told some of your Friends, that you had a cruel Affair upon your Hands, and that the *Maltotier*, with whom you was, made you terrible Menaces. This was enough to set them upon him when they found that you was vanished; they prepared to enter a Procefs against him. Your Mistress, to whom you had said the same Thing, still more alarmed than they were, had the Indiscretion to interest, in your Behalf, the illustrious Lover who took care of her. This generous Nobleman did more than she required, he took the Trouble to go to the *Maltotier*, in order to question him, and to intimidate him.

The *Maltotier*, far from appearing terrified at the Menaces that were given him, answered coldly, that he was himself very uneasy for you; that your Absence disordered his Affairs infinitely, because you had not given in any Account, and that he had not dared to have your Chamber opened, tho' he wanted extremely several Papers that
were

were in it. The obliging Lover immediately sent for a Blacksmith, made the Chamber be opened, examined some Books of Accounts, which he delivered to the *Maltotier*, and then taking an Inventory of what belonged to you, he found several Toys which he had given to *La Desmarets*, with some Letters that she had writ to you, and which you had had the Imprudence to keep by you. He discovered by this the real Motive that engaged the Nymph so warmly in your Interest, and piqued to find himself duped so grossly, he resolved to punish her for her Infidelity.

You know that he is always hasty in executing what he has once resolved upon. He came the next Morning to fetch her in the Equipage that he had given her, to go, he said, and dine at the *Bois du Boulogne*, and walk there together the Remainder of the Day. When they came to *Passy*, he desired her to order the Repast herself, after which he went with her into the thickest Part of the Wood; there feigning a Necessity for it, he went from her, and immediately returning alone to *Paris*, left this

un-

unfortunate Woman there without an Equipage, and without a Lover to pay for the Dinner that she had ordered. This was not all ; his Love, turned into Hatred, would not be satisfied with this Revenge ; he carried his Resentment so far, as to send for all her Furniture, and every Thing that he had given her, and to procure her a Lodging in that Place of Horror, whose Door is always open to those Persons who are unfaithful to Lovers that have Interest and Power.

It was there that I saw for three Years this poor Creature in a Situation worthy of Compassion. As her Bloom was passed, nobody gave themselves any Concern about her, and possessing nothing, she was not in a Condition to buy her Liberty. She received no Consolation there but from me, who not having the Money then that I have at present, could procure her but few Conveniencies in that Place of Misery. The Day which was to deliver her from her Sorrows at length arrived ; she died thoroughly weaned from the World, and bitterly lamenting the Disorders of her Life.

This

This was the Relation that the little *Brunette* gave us of the Death of *La Desmarets*; which I could not hear without Emotions of Sorrow and Compassion. I had already lived a considerable Time in *Paris* in the Manner that I have related, and being tired with it, I told the Chevalier I wished extremely to see the Country that gave me Birth. I did indeed sincerely wish to hear of my poor affectionate Nurse, and particularly of my dear *Lucilia*, whom I always remembered with Pleasure. The Chevalier who received no Answers from *Canada*, opposed my Design strongly, as if by losing sight of me, he had lost all Hope of seeing his Sister again. He yielded, notwithstanding this, to my Intreaties, upon Condition that my Journey should not be above a Week or a Fortnight, and that I should go it in his Post Chaise, and be escorted by his Valet de Chambre.

I departed then, and after a Journey of some Days * I stopped in a little Town not far distant from the Village *du Mesnil*. I learnt there that the Castle
which

* 1700.

which bore that Name was inhabited only by Farmers ; that the Baron unfortunately died there four or five Years before, and that to keep in his own Possession the Estate of his first Wife, he would never marry *Lucilia*, putting off, by a thousand Pretensions, all the Matches that were offered for her ; but that, since the Death of that Nobleman, the Relations of *Lucilia*, by the Mother's Side, took her from under the Care of her Mother-in-Law, and obliged her to marry an old Batchelor, a Lieutenant General, who in four Months after, running too hastily after the Baron of a Marechal of *France*, threw himself into a Trench, where he had found a glorious Death, together with several other brave Officers that followed him ; and that this young Widow, now become her own Mistress, was returned to the Barons *du Mesnil*, who had retired to *Ganderon*.

As to my Nurse, I was obliged to go to her own Village to know what was become of her. They told me, that she had finished her Course some little Time before the Baron *du Mesnil*. She had

had a Daughter, added they, who disappeared when she was very young, and has never been heard of since. She has left what little Money she had to the Baroness to deliver to that Daughter, if she is ever found again; and this good Lady has had her enquired for every where. I doubted not after this but that my Nurse had made her greater Confidences, upon my Account, than she had ever done to myself, which gave me as much Impatience to speak to the Baroness, as I had to see *Lucilia* again.

What embarrassed me was, that I did not know under what Pretext I could present myself to them. I knew no Person at *Ganderon*, nor in the Country that could introduce me; and I feared making them uneasy, and passing for an Adventurer, if I attempted to go directly to them: Nevertheless, some Person telling me, that there was an Estate to sell not far from *Ganderon*, I took a Resolution of going there. This happened to be exactly the Estate of *Monneville*, which had fallen to four or five rapacious Heirs after the Death of my nearest Relation, who had taken Possession

sion of it, upon the Credit of some Certificates, which attested that the Count *de Monneville*, my Father, was killed in *Westphalia*.

I arrived at *Monneville* about two or three in the Afternoon, and my Guide made me alight at a poor little Inn that was there. I went immediately to the Castle, and whilst I was examining of it, the *Cure*, who generally answered all Questions in the Absence of the Sellers, came up to me. I had no sooner told him that I had an Intention of buying this Estate, than looking upon me already as his Patron, he overwhelmed me with Civilities. He offered me a Bed and his little Supper, with so much Frankness and so obstinate a Complaisance, that I was obliged to let him conduct me home with him. What pleased me in this good Man was, that he appeared to be a great Talker, and I judged that this Frailty would be of Service to me in my Enterprize.

After the first Compliments, which lasted near a full Quarter of an Hour, the old *Cure* looking stedfastly upon me.

me,—I would give all that I possess in the World, said he to me, that this Estate might be suitable to you. You resemble so perfectly the last of the Family, to whom it belonged, before this collateral Line took Possession of it, that I should imagine I had not lost that Gentleman if I saw you in his Place. Yes, Monsieur, added he with Transport, only by seeing you, I find myself inclined to love you as I did him, and to think myself indebted to you for the Obligations I had to him. They were not small ones: It was he who made me what I am; it was he who gave me this Benefice, which is one of the best in the Province.

I should not so soon have lost that amiable Gentleman, continued he, if he would have believed me and remained here in Tranquility, without making it a Point of Honour to himself to follow the Example of his Father, to whom the Service had been fatal.

I saw plainly that it was sufficient only not to interrupt this good Priest for him never to cease speaking. I let him
then

then amuse himself at full Liberty, by giving a Detail of all the good Qualities of his deceased Patron ; a Detail which I made him circumstantially repeat afterwards, when he knew the Interest I had in it. I questioned him after this upon the Noblesse that was near the Place, listening to him with an Attention that charmed him, and particularly when he was upon the Article of *Ganderon*, and that he spake to me of *Lucilia* and her Mother-in-Law. He told me, amongst other Particularities, that these two Widows loved Retirement, and did not make that Figure in the World that they might have done with the Fortune they enjoy, the Revenue of which he did not fail to calculate to me exactly.

I knew the Baronefs, said he to me, before she went to *Paris*, when she was only Mademoiselle *de Ganderon* : Good God ! how much the Convent altered her, as well as the Marriage with the Baron *du Mesnil* ! She was then excessively gay, always laughing, always dancing, and now her Days seem only composed of Melancholly and Uneasiness,

ness, though she is not yet of an Age to be obliged to renounce the innocent Pleasures of the World. As to the young Dowager, she does not appear to look upon Life with so much Indifference, not that I believe she thinks of marrying again ; at least, there is no Appearance of her having such a Thought : On the contrary, she is attached so strongly to her Mother-in-Law, that I doubt whether she would quit her a second time.

You will easily suppose, pursued he, that she has been addressed by those that are most considerable in this Country : Exclusive of her Fortune she has a great Share of Merit ; she is virtuous, and has been well brought up. She was, perhaps, not satisfied with her first Marriage, said I to the good *Cure* ? She could not be very much so, replied he ; and it was a Sin to let her wait till Five and Twenty, and then give her such an old Husband as he whom she married, by the Avidity of her Relations, who thought by that to have doubled her Estate ! but Heaven punished them for it,

it, for he died in a few Months, and she had no Child by him.

I asked the *Cure* after this if she did not think of buying *Monneville*. I believe not, said he, for they would have spoke to me of it : Yet this Estate would be very convenient to the Baronefs ; but finding herself without Children, she makes no Acquisitions. Therefore, you may depend upon it that neither she nor her Daughter-in-law will interfere in your Purchase. Notwithstanding what the old *Cure* said to me, I thought I ought to make use of the Pretext of going to pay them a Compliment upon the Account of this Estate, and assuring them that I would think no more of it if they had the least Inclination to it. I soon made the *Cure* enter into my Views, and he offered to conduct me the next Day to *Ganderon*.

To judge of me by my Habit, I must pass for a Man of Consequence ; never Gentleman upon that Spot had been dressed in one so rich as that I wore, nor even as that of the Valet de Chambre who attended me. I could not be mistaken

taken when we advanced to the two Ladies. They were walking alone, and the *Cure* began to question them by their Names, and speak to them as far as ever they could hear him. To return the Compliment which he had made them, these charming Widows received me with great Civility, and told me, that they should think themselves happy in such a Neighbour. The Ladies and I spoke very little, for the old Patriarch, who I suppose imagined he was in his Pulpit, never held his Tongue; but if our Lips were wanting, our Eyes did their Duty faithfully; those of the Baroness were constantly fixed upon me, and mine upon my dear *Lucilia*.

We had been separated so young, that it was not surprizing that she did not remember me. I had even a Difficulty to recollect her, tho' I knew it was she. This Visit passed without any Ecclaircissement, tho' I had as great a Desire for that, as they had to know who I was. The Baroness imagining that the *Cure* might instruct her in it, drew him aside to ask him that Question. She only embarrassed him by that Demand, to
which

which he answered that he was ignorant of my Name, but that he would spare no Pains to discover it. I do not remember what I said to *Lucilia* during that Time, I remember only that I was in an Agitation of Mind, which must surprize her if she perceived it.

In a few Moments after the Baronefs had quitted the Conversation of the *Cure* to enter into ours, that good Ecclesiastick embarrassed her extremely in her Turn: Madame, said he to her, looking upon me, I don't know whether my Eyes deceive me; tell me, I desire you, if in your early Youth you have never seen a Person who resembled this Gentleman. The Baronefs, who had not in the least expected this Question, was confused with it; she had but too strongly remarked the Resemblance that he spoke of. However, she answered, that she believed she might have seen some Person that I had some Features of, but that she could not remember where. Have you forgot, returned he, the Count *de Monneville*, a great Friend of your late Father's, who was killed in *Franche Comte* in Sixty-eight? He left
two

two Sons, of whom the eldest died almost at the same Time with himself, the youngest survived him some Years. Madame, do but consider these Features, this is certainly the living Image of that youngest Brother, I am surprized that it does not strike you as it did me. You were grown up pretty much whilst that *Monneville* lived, you have played together a hundred Times. Your Father loved him much, and regretted him extremely. As to me, I owe my little Establishment wholly to him, and I shall never forget him in my Prayers.

I said so Yesterday to this Gentleman, added he: This Resemblance has given me such an Inclination for him, that I wish extremely he may agree for the Estate of *Monneville*. Well, Monsieur *le Cure*, said I to him, manage so that I may have it; you cannot do me a greater Service than procure me the Neighbourhood of these Ladies, and I protest to you that you shall not be less satisfied with your new Patron than you have been with him whom you regret. The Affair is entirely in your Hands,

Hands, said the Baronefs to him, you may make it fucceed if you please, fince it is you that generally receive all Offers for it. The *Cure* upon this promifed to ufe his utmoft Endeavours to bring it to a Conclufion.

At my taking Leave of thefe two Dowagers, I defired them to permit me fometimes to pay my Compliments to them whilft I remained in the Country. They answered me, that it would be doing them a Pleafure, and as it was what I earneftly wifhed, I took Care not to fail in it. The next Day was a Holiday, and I was informed that Mafs was faid at *Ganderon* at Nine o'Clock, and that the Ladies generally went there. An Impatience feized me to go thither, and make myfelf known to them. I was in the Church before them, and when they arrived, the Baronefs having perceiv'd me, fent immediately to defire me to place myfelf in their Seat.

After the Mafs, I gave them my Hand to reconduct them; and I told them, that at the Hazard of appearing impertinent, I was come to take the Liberty to beg a

Dinner of them, but in the first Place a private Conversation. They appeared astonished at my Compliment; *Lucilia* particularly seemed to appear uneasy when we entered into the Cabinet of the Baronefs. When we were seated, Madame, said I to the Baronefs, you hinted Yesterday to the *Cure of Monneville*, that he would do you a Pleasure by informing himself who I was, and giving you an Account of it; whatever Enquiries he makes he can never succeed in it. Tho' I was born in these Parts, and even very near the Castle *du Mesnil*, where I have had the Honour of seeing you both for a considerable Time, yet am I certain I am not known here by any Person. This ought not to surprize you, since I quitted this Province at twelve Years old. Some few Years after I left the Kingdom, and went to the *West Indies*, from whence I have not been returned many Months.

During this Voyage, which comprehends almost my whole Life, I have always continued in absolute Ignorance of the Thing that was of the greatest Consequence for me to know, and which
now

now is the sole Reason of bringing me to this Place. I shall astonish you by saying what it is that I am ignorant of, and to whom I come to address myself to instruct me. I am ignorant who I am; and 'tis from you, Madame, said I to the Baroneſs, that I come to learn it, ſince it is to you alone that it muſt have been revealed, at her Death, by the only Perſon who knew it, I mean the Nurſe who brought me up.

The Baroneſs was not in a Situation to answer me; ſhe turned pale, and fainted away in the Arms of *Lucilia*, who not knowing what to think of all ſhe ſaw, was in the higheſt Amazement. In the mean Time the Baroneſs recovering the Uſe of her Senſes, and caſting her half-open'd Eyes upon her: How! my Daughter; ſaid ſhe to her, don't you know the little Siſter with whom you was brought up? Yes, Madame, ſaid I to *Lucilia*, it was I who, under another Form, paſſed the firſt Years of my Life near you. You did me the Honour to repay with your Friendſhip the tender and reſpectful Attachment that

I had for you; permit me to recall it to your Remembrance.

Whilst *Lucilia* recollected her Ideas, the Baronefs assured her that I spoke the Truth, and on my Side I cited so many Circumstances of our Education which were only known to us, that at length suffering herself to be perswaded, and looking upon me with a confused Air, If you are that little Sister, said she to me with a Sigh, you ought to be obliged to me for many Tears that you have cost me, and which I should have been less liberal of, if I had imagined you to be of a Sex that I ought not to have loved so much; nor been so concerned for the Loss of.

They both put so many Questions to me, that I was obliged to begin that Moment the Relation of my Adventures to them, and particularly in what manner I had left the Country, nobody having ever been able to imagine where I was. During this Conversation, and as long as the Dinner lasted, I saw the young Widow, whom I can call no otherwise than *Lucilia*, fall continually
into

into a Reverie, that made me judge she still doubted of what I said. I was in Despair that she only recollected me by Degrees.

As I did not doubt but my Nurse had declared to the Baronefs at her Death several Things that she durst not reveal to me upon Account of my Youth, I was very impatient to hear what that Lady had to say upon this Subject. *Lucilia* joined herself to me, to conjure her to satisfy so just a Curiosity; nevertheless, we could not prevail. Whatever Tendernefs *Madame du Mesnil* had for her Daughter-in-Law, she thought her Company superfluous at an Ecclaircissement in which she distrusted herself; and was not assured that she should not discover more than she desired.

All that I heard from the Nurse, said she, was, that she assured me that she was not your Mother; that she had always loved you as her own Child; and that, in fine, she destined to you the little Fortune she had, if I would condescend to take the Charge of it, and deliver it to you if you ever appeared in

the Province. The rest that she said to me, added the Baronefs, was Excuses for the Deceit she had put upon me, by leaving you in my Family disguised as a Girl.

Ah! Madame, said I, oblige me not by Halves. I know already what you have told me ; 'tis the Remainder that I conjure you not to conceal. Fix yourself near us, replied she smiling; purchase the Estate of *Monneville*; after which, if I know any thing more, and can recollect it, I promise to impart it to you. Reflect upon the Promise that you have made me, Madame, replied I; if it is only necessary to make this Acquisition to be informed of my Birth, I shall soon summon you to keep your Word.

There was nothing now to do but to strengthen *Lucilia* in the Belief she began to give to our Discourses. A Thought struck into my Head upon that Subject, which had more Effect than all the rest; by the Help of the Baronefs's Women, I dressed myself almost as I used to be at ten Years old; after

after which I presented myself to the Ladies, and feigning to weep, I approached *Lucilia* to beg her to console me as she used to do formerly, by suffering me to kiss her Hand. Oh! now I remember her perfectly, said she to her Mother-in-Law, 'tis she herself, it is my little Sister. Do you remember, Madame, whatever Uneasiness she had, I used to comfort her by giving her my Hand to kiss; it was a Remedy for all her Grievances.

Will you condescend to remember also, said I to *Lucilia*, that you promised me to love me always? Children's Promises, replied she! Children's Promises as much as you please, replied the Baroness, I hear a Man who will very willingly help you to fulfil them. This was the *Cure of Monneville*, who was just arrived, and whose Voice was plainly to be heard, tho' he was only in the Court. This good Priest, at as great a Distance as he could perceive the Ladies, began to ask many Questions, without giving them Time to answer one. As to me, crying out as loud as he did, I told him, as I went up to him, that I

was at length determined to become the Lord of his Parish, let the Terms be ever so high ; this gave him so excessive a Joy, that he appeared quite transported with it. Madame, said he to *Lucilia*, setting his Hands upon his Sides, we shall soon see if my Gentleman shall be treated like the rest. Yes, young disdainful Widow, I am resolved that, in less than six Months, he shall make your Widowhood tedious to you.

This Compliment, which threw us all into a Laugh, was however very agreeable to me, and the Baroness was not less desirous than myself of the Accomplishment of this propheticall Menace, as I very soon discovered. About a thousand Crowns that I offered more than any other, put me in Possession of the Estate and Title of *Monneville*. As soon as the Agreement was made, I flew to Madame *du Mesnil*; Your Advice, said I to her, has been a Command to me ; my Residence is fixed ; I shall no more quit a Country that gave me Birth, and that has recalled me from so far. You know what Inquietude I am in, will you still leave me

me in it? No, replied she, follow me only. At these Words she conducted me into a distant Apartment, where being alone with me, she spoke in these Terms :

Since the Title and Estate of *Monneville* is yours, I believe, I may now tell you, what I refused to discover to you some few Days since, lest the Desire of recovering it by another Method should have made you hazard Steps which would have been absolutely in vain, and which might have ruined the Characters of several People. The Compliment which is every where made you, that you resemble the late Count *de Monneville*, is not without Foundation. You are his Son. Can it be possible, Madame, interrupted I with Emotion, that that Gentleman was my Father? Yes, Monsieur, returned she, but you are under an absolute Impossibility of ever making yourself to be acknowledged as such, since you can have no other Testimony than that of your Nurse ; a Proof that will become useless to you, since she made this Confidence to me

I 5 only,

only, and told me that his Marriage was never declared.

'Tis still enough, Madame, said I, for my own particular Satisfaction, to know that I am of this illustrious Family; I shall easily console myself for not being able to make use of this Knowledge. But for Heaven's Sake proceed. Why did not the Count vouchsafe to acknowledge me? Why did she who gave me Life abandon me when I lost my Father? Had I the Misfortune to lose them both at the same Time? Was she worthy of his Tendernefs? Who was she? That is what I cannot inform you of, replied the Baronefs: Your Nurse did not name her to me, and even said, that she had never known her. 'Tis no matter, Madam, said I to her; you may make her known to me without her Assistance. You are not, perhaps, ignorant what Persons my Father was then intimate with. Recollect the Time, you will inevitably find out who was my Mother.

If my Suspitions could become a Certitude, replied the Baronefs, what
Benefit

Benefit would you have from that Knowledge? You would, perhaps, be dear to a Person to whom you might not so much as give your Esteem; for in Fact, the Obstacles which prevented your Parents from rendering this Union publick were still subsisting, when Death took away your Father. Do you imagine, that under such Circumstances any Woman of Honour would acknowledge you publickly.

Heaven forbid, said I, Madam, that I should exact that from her Complaisance. I wish only to know this unhappy Mother, that I might console her in private for the Loss of my Father, if she is still sensible to it, to speak of it continually with her, to mix my Tears with her's, to respect her, and to love her as I ought. But, no, I am too unhappy ever to enjoy so great a Consolation. If my Mother is living, I must never know her, nor feel the Pleasure of her Embraces; I learn my Father is no more, as soon as I have learned his Name. I am even deprived of the melancholly Consolation of watering his Tomb with my Tears, since the precious

cious Remains of that brave Man are, as I have heard, in the Centre of *Germany*.

Alas ! returned the Baronefs with a deep Sigh ; it is but too true that he has loft his Life, but he was not deprived of it fo far diftant from hence : Thefe are Horrors which I dare not relate to you, and which I cannot think of without Terror. I faw her Tears run down whilft ſhe pronounced thefe Words, which made me open my Eyes, and recollect feveral Actions that had eſcaped her.

You weep, Madam, ſaid I to her, you weep in ſpeaking to me of the Death of my Father : Suffer me to explain myſelf, and to ſay what I think : The Dread you have left I ſhould ſuſpect thoſe with whom my Father was intimate before my Birth ; the Share you take in what regards me ; the Situation you were in when I firſt made myſelf known ; even your very Looks at this Moment, diſcover the Truth. Can I be deceived by ſo many Proofs ? No, Madam, no, my Heart tells it me with
ſtill

still greater Certitude, you are, you are my Mother.

I threw myself at her Feet as I spoke this. She was more dead than alive, and made me no Reply but by embracing me. After a long Silence, more expressive than any Words, she made me rise, and related to me in what Manner, after having promised the Count *de Monneville* she would be only his, she had been obliged to determine upon marrying the Baron *du Mesnil*, believing with the rest of the World that the Count had been killed in *Germany*.

The Baronefs afterwards said to me, I should have known you in your Infancy, if your Nurse had not disguised your Sex to me, because your Features even then recalled to my Memory those of the Count; and that I knew perfectly the Woman to be the same to whom I confided you at your Birth; but I durst never attempt to ask her whether you were alive; it was not till her Death that I was informed of all. 'Tis now four or five Years since, that having fallen dangerously ill, she sent to
tell

tell me, that she wished to speak to me in private. The Baron *du Mesnil*, who was then alive, conducted me to her; and waited above an Hour in the Coach, whilst this good Woman related to me the History of your Birth, which I knew at least as well as herself. But when she informed me that her Daughter being dead, she had taken you in her Place, and brought you up under my Eyes as such, judge of my Astonishment. It equalled the Agony I felt, when she told me afterwards in what Manner your Father had been killed almost at the Gate of the Castle *du Mesnil*, by the Baron himself. I was immoveable, and almost without Sentiments, whilst she gave this cruel Detail; and I had scarce Strength to hold out my Hand to her, to receive the *Portefeuille* of the Count, in which, besides his own Writings, I saw some Letters which I had sent to him.

The Baron, who waited with Impatience for me at the Door, was something surprized to see me return in the Situation I was in. Happily the melancholly Duty I had been paying to
this

this good Woman, appeared to him the only Cause of my Emotion. I did not return one Word to the Complaints he made of the Length of my Visit; and I could not cast my Eyes upon him without shivering with Horror. He was my Husband, but he was also the Assassin of the Man to whom I had given my Faith. Whatever Efforts I made to conceal from him my Uneasiness, and the invincible Aversion I had for him, he perceived it; and if he had not died almost as soon as the Nurse, we must inevitably have lived very ill together; but happily for me he was struck with a mortal Disorder, and had only Time to regulate the Affairs of his Conscience.

This sudden Stroke of Heaven touched me; but instead of being moved with my Tears, the last Words that he addressed to me were, to felicitate me upon my approaching Liberty, and to complain of my Behaviour to him. The Baronefs here ceased to speak, and I addressed myself to her thus: Madam, said I, I look upon the Happiness of knowing you to be my Mother, as the
greatest

greatest that could have happened to me. You may dispose of me more absolutely than if all human Laws submitted me to your Power; and the first Favour that I presume to beg of you, in the Quality of a Son, is to permit me to remain always with you. She was transported to see me have that Design, and told me that her's was to attach me so strongly to her, that the knowing her should not prove fruitless to me. She declared to me, that she wished to unite me to *Lucilia*, to whom she desired me never to communicate what she had informed me of, not even after our Marriage, if she should make it succeed.

She founded the young Dowager upon that Head, and she confessed to her that she had the same Inclinations, and that she should be pleased with having her little Sister for her Husband: But that the Thing appeared impossible to her, as her Family, who had so great an Interest in her not marrying again, would certainly dispute upon my Incapacity of shewing Proofs of my Name, my Family, my Quality, and my Country. The Baroness told her, that effectively

fectively she foresaw Difficulties on that Head ; but that she believed I should easily find Methods to obviate them, when it was come to that Crisis.

I was admitted into their little Councils, and gave a thousand tender Thanks to *Lucilia* for the Goodness she expressed to me. To answer the Difficulties that they proposed to me, I told them that I only required their Permission to make a Journey to *Paris*, that I would engage some of the Friends that I had there to let me pass for their Relation, and revive in me some extinct Branch of their Family ; that, together with this, I might buy a Post in the Household, which would put me upon a Footing that might prevent the Relations of *Lucilia* from opposing my Happiness. They applauded my Design, and I prepared immediately for my Departure, in order to execute it.

I had no great Treasure left, and I could depend only upon the Friendship of the Chevalier, who had made me a thousand Offers of Service. I expected that he would be my Security, for what
I might

I might take up. I did not however put him to this Trial, as the Baroneſs, when ſhe wiſhed me a good Journey, put into my Chaiſe a ſtrong Box, in which I found forty thouſand Livres in Gold, and in Bills of Exchange.

My Abſence had appeared very long to the Chevalier. I found him in Deſpair at not having heard from his Siſter. He would abſolutely go in Search of her himſelf amongſt the Savages. It was not without great Difficulty that I promiſed him that I would accompany him, if there was an abſolute Neceſſity of it. As ſoon as he knew my approaching Marriage, and what brought me to *Paris*, he went with me to *Verſailles*, where he ſoon procured me an Employment capable of dazzling the Eyes of the whole Province ; but then the Purchaſe of it, I muſt own, coſt me almoſt all my Finances. I cauſed Liveries to be made for me the ſame as the Chevalier, and a magnificent Equipage to appear in at *Monneville* ; an Equipage ſo rich, and ſo ſplendid, that like that of *Phaeton*, it was ſufficient
alone

alone to make Envy silent, or more properly to excite it.

A certain Air of Grandeur and Opulence imposes infinitely upon the Provincials. All my Vassals were for several Days under Arms, and I recompensed their Zeal with Generosity. Nothing was spoke of but the Count *de Monneville*; they did not so much as reflect, that I was to have any other Name. I made my Visits immediately in great State, and they were received by me in as elegant a Manner as they would have been by the Governor of the Province. My whole Conversation was of the Lords of the Court, and I strove to insinuate that no body had more Credit there than I had. To another, I said, that this Country pleased me, that I should buy and build there. I acted this Part with regret, but it was necessary to me. The Relations of *Lucilia*, dazzled like the rest with my splendid Appearance, thought themselves too happy that I condescended to enter into their Family, upon which they flattered themselves that I should attract the gracious Influences of *Verfailles*.

We did not, however, think it proper to let the Thing cool; whilst the *Cure of Monneville* proposed my Hand to *Lucilia*, who feigning a Surprize desired Time to consider upon it: I visited her Relations, and solicited their Suffrages with an Air of Politeness, and yet with that Confidence which those have who do not fear a Refusal. My Pretensions did not displease them. I feigned that, on my Side, I must have the Approbation of some Relations that I had at *Paris*; and I writ to the Chevalier, that I desired him to perform the Promise he had made me, to come to my Marriage as a Relation, with two of our mutual Friends, whom I had engaged to be of the Party.

They came all three so magnificently dressed, and with so great a Train, that by endeavouring to do me Honour, they would have discovered our innocent Deceit, if there had been any Genealogist in the Country, since making a Figure as Men of the first Quality, the Chevalier always called me Brother, and the others their Cousin. I explained to the Ladies this pretended Fraternity, by informing

forming them that the Chevalier had never called me otherwise since we had known each other, having had a Design to marry me to a Sister he had in *New-France*.

The Nuptials were celebrated at *Ganderon*, with a Pomp and Magnificence that they had not been accustomed to see in that Part of the World. We departed some few Days after, all together to *Paris* to pass the Winter there; the Baronefs, my Mother, fell ill; and as there are not Physicians in great Plenty there, she had very near lost her Life. This rendered that City so odious to the two Ladies, that they conjured me to carry them back into the Country.

I had also so true a Taste of that Life of Tranquility which I passed with them in the Province, that I was soon tired of my Employment. I desired the Chevalier to dispose of it for me, and to obtain the Permission of the Court. He did me that Service very willingly, upon Condition that I should make a Voyage to *Canada*, as I had promised him. It was in vain that I had endeavoured
to

to excuse myself, and represented to him the Repugnance that *Madame de Monneville* would have to consent to it, it was impossible to resist his Persecutions, he even carried them so far as to procure an Order for my going there from the King himself, by the Hand of *Monfieur Pontchartrain*; who, to oblige me to it still more inevitably, ordered the Price of my Charge to be put in Trust, not to be delivered to me till my Return. I saw plainly that I must absolutely buy my Repose by this last Step; I resolved upon it therefore, against the Sentiments of *Lucilia*, who, to disappoint the Voyage, would willingly have abandoned our Money to the Depository.

Before our Departure, the Chevalier made a large Provision of all that I told him would be suitable for the Presents he designed to make to the Subjects of the *Sakgame* his Sister; he unfurnished several Shops of Gunsmiths, Glass-sellers, Ironmongers, and other Trades, not to mention the Toys of the *Palais*. I am certain he carried off above the Value of
ten

ten thousand Crowns in those trifling Wares.

As we came through *Amboise*, our Post-Chaise overturned ; I came off with some slight Contusions on the Head, but the Chevalier broke his Arm. An Apothecary, who was in the Place, not being willing to undertake the setting of it, we were obliged to send for a Surgeon from *Tours* ; we had no Time to lose ; our Merchandizes were embarked at *Nantes*, and they waited only for a favourable Wind to set sail. It was impossible to think of exposing the Chevalier to the Fatigues of the Sea, in the Condition he was in ; I advised him to stay at *Amboise* till he was perfectly recovered, and let me continue the Route, assuring him, that if I made the Voyage alone, I could perform it in much less Time than if he was with me. He delivered me, therefore, my Letters of Credence, and I parted from him.

When I arrived at *Quebec*, I was informed, by the Intendant, and at the *Recolet's*, that upon our Letters from *Paris* they had taken all possible Methods

thods to discover what was become of *Mademoiselle du Clos*, without any Person's having been able to find her out, tho' they had her sought after by the Missionaries, and by the Soldiers whom they had sent to the Places which we described. I was obliged, therefore, to resolve upon continuing my Voyage, without knowing myself that I should find her where I had left her. I loaded upon several Canoes the Bales and the Cases destined for her little Court, and I embarked for *Montreal*, where I proposed to leave them, rather than run the Hazard of carrying them at an Uncertainty so long and so difficult a Way.

Before I went farther myself I determined to wait some Days there, instead of risking, perhaps in vain, the most fatiguing Part of the Journey. Whilst I rested there, I sent two very intelligent Men, who were acquainted with the Route, to the Fort where I had resided, with Letters for the Persons to whom I had sold my Habitation; not doubting but the young Man that I had known there still kept up some Commerce with
the

the *Sakgame* whom I had made known to them, and could inform me concerning her.

Whilst I waited for their Return I had long and frequent Conferences with the Abbess of *Notre-Dame at Montreal*. I was desired to see her by one of her Relations, who was a Friend of the Chevalier's. She was a Religieuse worn by Infirmities, who, with a Zeal beyond all Example, had supported the most dreadful Fatigues, to carry the Light of Faith amongst the most savage Nations, where she had seen two of her Nieces, who followed her every where, seized and torn to Pieces by these furious *Catechumens*. She was called, as I remember, *Bourgeois*; she was of a noble Family in *Champagne*, and had been the first Abbess of her Convent.

I remember that this pious Lady shed a Torrent of Tears, when I read to her the Answer that I received as to *Made-moiselle du Clos*. It was writ by the Hand of that young Man who had accompanied me to the *Hurons*, and it was conceived in these Terms:

“ You have made a long Voyage in
“ vain, if you come only in search of
“ *Mademoiselle du Clos*. The Autho-
“ rity of the King, by whose Com-
“ mand it is said you are come, is of no
“ Force with her; laid in the Grave, she
“ no longer acknowledges any mortal
“ Power. This incomparable Woman
“ did not long survive your Departure
“ from this Country. Her Death has
“ been fatal to many Persons, and would
“ have proved so to me, if it had been
“ recent when I was last in that Canton
“ of the *Hurons* where she reigned. The
“ *French* whom you saw with her, to
“ the Number of Twenty-five, were
“ the greatest Part of them sacrificed
“ upon her Tomb. 'Tis thought that
“ she foresaw these melancholly Effects
“ of the Love they bore her; as during
“ her Sickness, she sent several of them
“ into these Parts upon different Pre-
“ texts. They say, that amongst the
“ rest she would have done that Service
“ to her Missionary, and that she had
“ charged him with several Letters for
“ you and for her Family; but that, as
“ he refused to abandon her whilst there
“ was any Hope of her Recovery, he
“ de-

“ departed too late. It is supposed that
“ he was fetched back again and killed,
“ for he has never appeared. This is not
“ all, Monsieur ; eight of the most amia-
“ ble young Women who were about
“ her, resolved also to follow her into the
“ other World, to serve her and keep
“ her Company : The *Sakgame* in vain
“ conjured them to renounce such de-
“ testable Maxims, but she could not
“ prevail ; for as she was expiring, she
“ heard those who would not survive
“ her, regulating their Affairs to go to
“ the other World, as we would do in
“ this to take a Journey of fifty Leagues.
“ What she thought the best she could
“ do, in her last Moments, for these
“ unhappy faithful Women, was, that
“ she assured them that in the Country
“ of the Dead, she would receive none
“ into her Company but those who were
“ Christians as she was. This engaged
“ many who had not already embraced
“ the Faith, to have themselves solemn-
“ ly baptized before they died. Since
“ that Time, Monsieur, there does not
“ pass a Day without several of the Sa-
“ vages going to smook upon her Grave,
“ and asking her with a loud Voice, if
“ she

“ she stands in need of any thing. It
“ was perhaps the Zeal and Affection
“ with which I performed this Cere-
“ mony, that saved me from being a
“ Sacrifice. They were pleased with
“ me for it, and particularly appeared
“ enchanted with my Tendernefs, when
“ they saw me lay upon her Grave my
“ Money, my Sword, my Knife, and
“ all the little Toys I had about me,
“ promising them to come frequently
“ to offer fuch Presents to her. If you
“ have the leaft Doubt, Monsieur, of
“ what I relate to you, take a fufficient
“ Efcort, and I will accompany you to
“ the very Place.”

I do not believe 'tis poffible to be more touched than I was, when I heard this News and the Accounts that were given me by the two Men who brought it. They told me, that this valuable Woman was not lefs beloved by the *French* than by the Savages ; and that in all the Families to which I had fent, there was not a Perfon who could mention her without Tears in their Eyes. All that Mademoifelle *du Clos* had faid to me of the Attachment that the *Hu-*
rons

rons had for her, did not suffer me to doubt a Moment of the Truth of what I heard. I was tempted a thousand times to send to so grateful a People all the Presents that I had brought for them; and I should certainly have done so, if the Effects had belonged to me. But I knew not whether the Chevalier would approve of it; and I exchanged them all for Skins, which were of no Service to him notwithstanding, since the Vessel, on which I embarked to return into *France*, was attacked near the great Bank of *Newfoundland*, and taken by the *English*.

We were conveyed to *Boston* in *New England*. Two Passengers, who were taken Prisoners with me, hinted to the Captain that I must be a Man of Distinction, since I was known to *Louis* the XIVth, and came by his Orders into *Canada*. This obliged the *English* to treat me severely, putting me upon the most laborious Tasks; and when I could support them no longer, letting me repose myself in a noisome Dungeon. They used me in this Manner to constrain me to redeem myself by a Ran-

som of a hundred thousand Livres, which they had the Insolence to demand of me, and of the Gentleman who was with me.

The Captain of the Vessel that you have taken, bought us there as Slaves are bought, in Hopes doubtless of gaining more than the Price that we cost him. He has forced us along with him, above a Year, to *Jamaica* and upon the Coasts of *Africa*. We wished that he might have carried us into *England*, because he would have found there People who are acquainted with all the great Families in *France*, and who would have undeceived him upon our Account. But, Thanks to Heaven ! our Ransom is now paid ; for I have not the least Imagination, that you will set a Price upon the Liberty that you have procured for us. We have all the Gratitude for it that is possible, and that is all that a generous Heart demands.

The End of the FIFTH BOOK.



THE
ADVENTURES
OF THE
Chevalier de Beauchene.

The Continuation of the History
of the Chevalier DE BEAUCHENE.

BOOK VI.

He meets two English Vessels appointed to guard the Coasts, who take him Prisoner. To recover his Liberty he forms a Project, which fails of Success. He is put ashore with his Companions at the Foot of a Rock in the Desarts of Guinea, where they are left without

Provisions, and without Arms. After running through a thousand Dangers, Beauchene, with two of his Companions, arrives at Cape Coast, where he falls again into the Hands of the Captain who took him before. He is shut up in a Dungeon, and afterwards set at Liberty. He is conveyed to Judda, where he is kindly received by Monsieur de Chamois, Governor of the French Fort, who engages him in an Attempt to ravage the Princes-Island. A Detail of that Expedition. Several Descents made by Beauchene upon the Coasts of Brasil. The Seizure of a Captain of one of the Guarda Coastas. A Price set upon the Head of the Chevalier de Beauchene by the Governor of Rio Janeiro. He takes a considerable Prize. The Valour of the Portuguese. He, accompanied by several other Privateers, join the Troops commanded by Monsieur Cassart. They go to ravage Montserrat. The Consequences of that Expedition.



ALL my Privateers were so charmed with the History of *Monneville*, that they assured him they would willingly consent that we should return directly to *Senegal*, and even to the *Canaries*, from whence it would be easy for him to return into *France* through *Spain*. Nevertheless, after this first Emotion of Kindness, a Council was held upon this Subject, and it was judged to be more proper to continue to cruize upon the Coasts of *Africa* for some Time, that we might meet with some other Prize, and then go to sell them together at *St. Domingo*, where he would not fail of Opportunities of returning to *France*, or to *Cadiz*, in case we made any considerable Capture.

We were near a Month without meeting any thing; after which, about the Height of *Boufaut*, we discovered two *English* Ships. I took them at first to be Merchant Ships, and did not know them to be Men of War, stationed upon the Coast, till they came up to us. I tacked about immediately to have avoided them, but one of the two, a
fine

fine light Frigate, of forty Guns and three hundred Men, came up with us, after a Chace of twelve Hours. We defended ourselves from Midnight, when we were attacked, till Ten in the Morning, always upon the Retreat. I was obliged then to strike in spite of myself, our Vessel being so disabled that it was impossible to work her. The second *English* Ship, named the *Carbuncle*, of fifty Guns, came up to us after the Combat, and we were put on board of her.

There were already a great deal of good Company in her Hold, and amongst the rest near three hundred *French*, who had been taken in the *Cæsar Corsair* of *Nantes*, commanded by the valiant Captain *Cazali*, a *Creolian* of *St. Christopher's*. I had seen him in *America*, and when he knew that it was I that they were putting in Irons, he came to make me his Compliment of Condolance. As to himself, he was at full Liberty in the *English* Ship; he eat with the Officers, and was a Party in all their Amusements.

For

For fear of a Sickness, and for our Necessities, we were permitted to come upon the Deck two at a Time, and take the Air there. I was always there with *Monneville*, and as neither we nor Monsieur *Cazali* had yielded to the *English* without having made a great Havock amongst them, we remarked that there were fewer Men in the *Carbuncle* than there were Prisoners. We imparted this Observation to the few Privateers that were remaining, and in Concert with them we began to excite the *French* to revolt. I represented to them, that nothing was more easy than to make ourselves Masters of the Vessel, if we attacked the Company by Night, and in a proper manner; that after this we might easily retake our own Vessels, and perhaps the *English* Frigate.

The Love of Liberty animated them all as much as it did me; but they found the Difficulty of recovering it much greater than I represented it. By running through continual Dangers a Privateer accustoms himself to think them less than they really are, and to despise them. It is not the same with all other Soldiers.

Our

Our greatest Embarrass was, that we had no Arms. I told them upon that Head, that if Monsieur *de Cazali* would not assist us to get them by Surprize, I would take upon myself to furnish them with them, being satisfied I could break open the Chest of Arms when we were upon the Deck.

When they had all given me their Word of Honour, I communicated our Design to Monsieur *Cazali*, who approved it; but when I told him, that the Success depended more upon him than us, and that we could do nothing unless he procured us the Keys of the Chest of Arms, which it would be easy for him to get in the Night, by stabbing the Man who kept them: My dear Chevalier, said he to me, pressing me by the Hand, I will keep your Secret, because I don't think myself obliged to reveal it, but I cannot be of your Party. What is Address and Courage in you, in me will be Perfidy and Baseness. As a *French* Man I wish you may succeed, and as a Man of Honour I cannot betray an Enemy, who spares my Life, and trusts his with me.

I can-

I cannot blame you, returned I to Monsieur *Cazali*, however prejudicial your Delicacy is to us. Keep our Secret then ; I will not abandon my Enterprize, tho' the Event, which you might render infallible, becomes doubtful without your Assistance.

Every one knows, that during the Night one half of the Ship's Crew watch, and that they relieve each other every four Hours ; we choose the midst of one of these Watches to strike our Blow. There were about half a Dozen Privateers who had found Means, as I had done, to get off their Irons ; I had more Dependence upon them than all the rest. When the appointed Hour was come, I took one of the strongest, with whom going upon Deck, at Two in the Morning, as if to breathe a little Air, we threw down the Scuttles, into the Hold, the two Sentinels who guarded us, and they were immediately stifled. After this I seized upon a large Iron Crow, with which I broke open the Chest of Arms at the second Blow.

The

The great Noise that I made by this undid us. The sudden Alarm that this gave in the Vessel had two bad Effects for us ; it awaken'd the *English*, who put themselves in a Posture of Defence, and terrified the *French* who remained in the Hold, and who, not daring to come out, let forty or fifty of us, who had mounted the first, be overpowered by Numbers. What compleated our Defeat was, that after we had killed about twenty of the *English*, amongst whom was their Captain-Lieutenant, I received several Blows upon the Head, which stunned me, and threw me backwards amongst the Crowd. All my Privateers were treated in the same manner, so that there being no Person to command, nor to lead on the *French* who were remaining, we yielded up the Victory to the *English*. Thus when *Monneville* came up from the Hold, where I had sent him, to conjure the *French* not to abandon us, he found only a Handful defending themselves, whom he advised to retire with the rest, rather than throw away their Lives thus fruitlessly.

As

As soon as it was Day, the Officers of both the Vessels assembled on board the *Carbuncle*, and the Result of the Council of War that was held upon our Account was, that all the Prisoners should be separated, divided into the four Vessels, and laid in Irons, and that the Authors of the Revolt should be hanged at the Yards. They were soon discovered, and I was named to act that foolish Part, with *Monneville* and three of the Privateers.

We must inevitably have suffered that infamous Death but for Monsieur *Cazali*, who represented strongly to our Judges the Consequences of such a Sentence, which, in fact, was contrary to the Laws of Nations, and those of War, as he convinced them by their own Articles ; since it is always permitted to Prisoners to escape if it was in their Power, as it is to a Bird to fly from its Cage if it is not kept shut. In fine, he harangued them so pathetically, that he saved us from the Rope by the Force of his Eloquence.

But

But the *English*, who were unwilling we should lose by it, resolved within themselves to make us ample Retribution. They prepared themselves for it at Leisure, and fixed at length upon a Method of destroying us as certain, but more excusable. They set us ashore not long after in the Desarts of *Guinea*, at the Foot of a steep Rock the Evening before *Shrove-Tuesday*, in the Year 1711, where they left us without Provisions, without Arms, and each of us covered only with an old Shirt of blue Linnen. I remember when we were going down into the Long-Boat, where thirty Soldiers well armed waited to escort us, Monsieur *Cazali* said, holding out his Hand to me, Adieu, my poor Chevalier, thy Business is done ; if thou escapest the Paws of the Lions, it will be to die with Hunger, or else to appease that of the Negroes ; recommend thy Soul to God, my Friend.

Don't give yourself any Concern, Monsieur, replied I, if these Negroes are fierce and vulgar, we shall tame them and ennoble them. In my own Particular, I will People this Savage Land
with

with Chevaliers. This was on my Part entirely Rhodomontade. I was like those obstinate insolent Children, who when they are deprived of any Toy that they like, say they are tired of it. I was very sensible that being at a great Distance from *Cape Coast*, and still farther from *Judda*, we could never arrive thither through so many Dangers, and that we should be infallibly devoured either by the Negroes or the Wild Beasts.

At the Time when they had made us that uncivil Compliment that we were five of us to be hanged, I had artfully conveyed a Lancet from the Surgeon that attended us, and had concealed it in the Sleeve of my Shirt, with a Design of making use of it to dispatch the first *Englishman* that should pretend to put the Rope about my Neck, and immediately to procure myself the guilty Honour of perishing bravely by a Weapon, in spite of all the Power of my Enemies. These were the horrid Maxims that I had learned from the Savages, the Privateers, and from the *English* themselves. This Instrument remained
with

with me when we were set ashore ; thus I carried in my Sleeve our whole Arsenal.

It was no easy Labour for us to gain the Top of the Rock before it was Night. When we were there, we looked towards the Land to see if we could spy some Trees, from whence we might make ourselves Staffs to defend us, at least for some Time, from the Wild Beasts ; but we perceived not the least Bush. We resolved, however, not to advance any further, and to pass the Night there, each of us watching in our Turn to avoid any Surprise.

My Companions reflecting upon our deplorable Situation, melted into Tears, and almost strove who should despair the most : If we are not devoured this Night, said they, To-morrow we must perish in the Sands with Thirst and Heat, or else serve as Food to the Negroes through whose Cantons we are obliged to pass to reach *Judda*, and who spare none of the Whites who fall into their Hands. How can we escape so many Dangers ? Death was not the
greatest

greatest Evil that the *English* could have inflicted upon us. We should now have been at Liberty, but for the indiscreet Kindness of Monsieur *de Cazali*.

As to me, said *Monneville*, by recovering my Liberty I am ruined. I am in a Condition now that makes me wish to be in Chains. 'Tis done, my dear Friend, said he to me, we shall never more see *Canada* nor *France*. How deplorable will be the Fate of my Wife! added he: She must, like my Mother, now pass her Life in Tears, and in Expectation of the Return of a Husband whom she must never see again.

Though I saw as plainly as they did that our Ruin was unavoidable, yet I resolved to personate the Hero, and to console them. Do not let us throw off our Courage, said I to them; Dejection and Despair are the greatest Evils to those who are in such an Extremity as we are now. Patience and Resolution, my Friends! with those Qualities all Difficulties are to be overcome. We have only this Night to dread the Beasts. To-morrow we shall make us Clubs that
may

may be sufficient for our Defence. As to the Negroes, we ought rather to seek them out than to avoid them ; they will either receive us and grant us Provisions, or else, more cruel than their Tygers, they will attack us. Do you imagine we are to be pitied in either of these Cases ? In the first, we shall be preserved ; in the second, we will sell them our Lives most dearly, and lose them like Men of Courage. Is it not our Destiny ? Believe me, the Arrows of a Savage will give you no more Pain, than the Musket Bullet of an *English* Lord, or a *Portuguese* Cavalier.

After this I conjured them to repose themselves without any Fear, whilst I would be the first that watched ; this they refused to do. I lay down therefore to give them an Example, and I told them to wake me when it was their Turn to sleep. I did not find myself any more disposed to Rest than they were ; but I was unwilling they should perceive, that whilst I strove to reassure them, I was not less terrified than themselves. Their Complaints moved me, and my Face was covered with Tears, which

which I hid by crossing my Hands upon my Forehead. It was the second time in my Life, that it had ever happened to me to weep.

Nevertheless, as our Fear made us all keep a profound Silence, I believe I should have fallen asleep, if my Comrades had not advertised me that they saw a monstrous Animal coming towards us. This was a Lion, whose enormous Size we could easily distinguish. He was not above fifty Paces from us, and he looked upon us with Eyes full of Fire. I placed myself at the Head of the Troop, exhorting them above all things not to straggle from each other. You are in no present Danger, said I to them; this Monster cannot come to you before he has taken away my Life; and he cannot dispatch me so fast, but I shall have Time to pierce him in the Throat with my Lancet.

The Lion not seeing us move, advanced very gently within Pistol Shot of us, as curious to see us nearer, as we were dissatisfied with his Curiosity. I believe he would have carried it so far
as

as to have flown upon us, if two or three of our Comrades had not given a loud Shriek at the Sight of a Tyger, which passed by on the other Side. These two Animals, terrified at a Noise so new to them, took their Flight, and left us to recover ourselves a little from the Fear that they had given us.

We saw nothing during the remainder of the Night, and as soon as the Day appeared we began our Journey across the Land. After a March of four Hours, we found some Trees, under which we thought proper to make a Halt to strip two of them of their Bark, of which we made each of us a kind of Cap in the Form of a Gondola almost, and without which it would have been impossible to support the burning Heat of the Sun, which began to rise upon the Horizon. After this we continued our March ; but unfortunately for us, we continually met with Sands in which we sunk up to the Knees, and which were so burning that we were obliged to run as we passed through them.

We

We made a long Journey the first Day, because we had our full Strength, and we did not begin to feel the Effects of Hunger till the Evening. We laid amongst the Reeds upon the Bank of a fordable River, where we had a Night as damp as the Day had been hot. The Dew was so abundant, that in the Morning our Shirts were entirely wet. The Experience I had made in *Ireland* of the Truth of that Aphorism, which says, that something must be always given to the Stomach, made me taste of several different Sorts of Leaves of Trees and Reeds, which I made a Provision of before I departed, lest we might fall into some Desert where we should not have even that Resource. We only sucked the Juice of them that Day; but we eat of them the next, because none of us had been able to sleep in the Night.

Having taken a little to the Right, that we might not go too far from the Sea, we perceived at some Distance a Hill entirely covered with Trees. We immediately turned our Steps towards it, with a Design of passing the Night there;

there ; and when we arrived at it, after two or three Hours walking, we heard before us a Noise like the Strokes of a Woodman. We advanced gently towards the Place from whence it came, and we saw that it was a Negroe, who was making Incisions into the Palm Trees, as I had seen them do to the Maples in *Canada*.

These Incisions are made in the Maples when the Sap rises ; they let the Juice flow from Ten a-Clock in the Morning till Four in the Afternoon ; and there are some of these Trees, which during that Time, will yield several Gallons of Water, from which they extract a Sugar, which they pretend to be much better for the Stomach than that of the Islands.

We discovered in the midst of a beautiful Valley a large Village of Negroes, composed of above three hundred *Cases*, or Huts ; and between us and the Village six or seven hundred Men, who advanced to meet us armed with Bows and Arrows. The main Body of the Troop marched gravely,
as

as to an important Battle ; and about a hundred young Fellows, tall and well limb'd, running before the rest as the Forlorn Hope of the Army, approach'd us leaping and capering, and disappearing like Shadows at the least Motion we made ; or rather like a Flock of Starlings who see some Boys appear. At length these Negroes encouraging themselves by degrees, drew nearer and nearer to us ; but still keeping upon their Guard, they held their Bows bent, examined us for a Moment, and then took their Flight.

I said to my Comrades, that if they attack'd us, we must throw ourselves into the Midst of them, kill as many of them as we could, and die like Men of Honour. In a Word, my Friends, said I to them, imitate me, and do only what you see me do. We advanced however very slowly, with an humble and timid Look, half stooping, and leaning upon our Clubs, as if we had been quite exhausted. I say our Clubs, for we had provided ourselves with them from the Trees whose Bark served us as Hats. Our Countenances expressed

so much Weakness and Timidity, that these People must have been Cowards beyond all Expression to have the least Fear of us.

When they were about twelve Paces from our little Troop, one of the most considerable amongst them made a certain Cry, which obliged all his People to halt, and at the same Time to keep Silence. Then by a generous Effort he left the Rank and advanced towards us. I remarked, however, that Nature overpowered him ; for this Black Hero trembled, though above two hundred Negroes held their Bows bent, and were ready to shoot upon the first Signal. He held out his Hand to me, and I presented mine to him. He pressed the End of my Finger with his, saying to me, *Kio Kio paw*. I repeated the same Words at all Events, and putting my Hand to my Mouth, to make him understand that we wanted Provisions, I perceived that he comprehended what I wished to say to him. He turned towards his People, and having told them, I suppose, that we were unhappy Wretches from whom they had nothing
to

to fear, those amongst them who had the most Courage, had the Boldness to come in their Turns and press the End of our Fingers, saluting us with their *Kio Kio paw*. At length the Multitude grew valiant, and we were obliged to spend above a Quarter of an Hour in receiving and returning the Compliment composed by these Words.

To let us see that they comprehended we were dying with Hunger, some amongst them detached themselves from the rest, and ran to the Village to prepare us something to eat. To follow them thither we were obliged to press through a new Crowd of Men and Women, who were eager to gaze upon us. We would willingly have stood the Test of their Looks, if our Stomachs had been full; but their Curiosity seemed very importunate to us in the Condition we were in. We arrived, however, at length, at a large *Cafe*, before which they had placed a prodigious Quantity of dried Fish, which seemed to be destined for us.

We all seated ourselves near the *Cafe*, where redoubling the most expressive Gestures to shew our Hunger, we had the Consolation at last to see them serve us with those small Fishes, which, however, they did not suffer us to touch till they had performed the Ceremony of the *Calumet*. What was most happy for us was, that we satisfied ourselves without any ill Consequences attending it; in the first Place, because the Bones, which we certainly should not have had Patience to pick out, happened to be small and eatable; and secondly, because our Fishes were fried in Palm Oil, and that we drank at the same Time of the Wine made of the Juice of the Tree: This elegant Entertainment soon began to disgust us, and prevented us from taking too much.

During our Repast, besides the Crowd that was about us, the neighbouring Trees were entirely black as well as the Tops of the *Cafes*, there being such a Number of Negroes perched every where to examine us attentively. A little Incident that I shall relate, will shew the Warlike Nature of this People. My
Club

Club by Accident dropp'd out of my Hand, I stooped hastily to take it up, and this Movement of mine give such an Alarm, that they almost in general took their Flight; those who were upon the Trees leaped down immediately to escape, with as much Eagerness as if an Enemy's Army was come upon them. They reassured themselves, however, by degrees, and again drew near us.

When I saw that far from designing to do us Harm, they regarded us as People of whom they stood in Fear, I laid down my Club, and mixing myself amongst them, I began by Signs to enter into Conversation with some of the most intelligent of them. I made them apprehend that we had been robbed at Sea, stripp'd, and exposed upon their Coasts. For to shew us that they had understood us, they immediately gave us their Alms in abundance, every one according to his Power, in Feathers, Ivory, Shells, and other Things of the same Nature. As I named to them several times *Cape Coast* and *Judda*, to enquire of them the Way and the Distance, they answered me by

their Actions and Gestures, that the Rout to *Judda* was not practicable by Land, and that we should want only five Risings of the Sun to reach to *Cape Coast*; but that towards the End of the first Day we should meet with a Village of Negroes with whom they were at War, who were the most cruel in the whole Country, and who would infallibly devour us.

They offered us some of their Bows and Arrows to defend ourselves against their redoubtable Neighbours; but I made them a Sign that my Comrades could not make use of those Arms. As to myself, I took one of their Bows, which seemed to me to be the strongest, and making them all stand at a Distance, I shot an Arrow into the Air which amazed them extremely, by rising considerably higher than theirs, and falling streight down at my Feet. They made me shoot several others against the Figure of a Man, made of Barks of Trees and covered with Skins, upon which I suppose their Youth exercised themselves; and seeing that at thirty Paces farther distant than them, I never missed

missed it, they all began to caress me, by rubbing my Arms and my Shoulders, and making a thousand Gestures of Admiration and Respect before me.

Doubtless they took me for a most extraordinary Man. After this they did not presume to give us Alms, but Presents. And perceiving that nothing pleased us so much as Gold Dust, they gave it us in small Quantities indeed, none of them having a large Provision of it: They only gathered it to supply their daily Wants, and to exchange for what was necessary to them. All of it put together made near a Pound, which they had given us by Pinches, and which we carried off.

We passed the Night in this Village. They made us lye alone in a separate *Case* upon Mats of Reeds, and very obligingly presented to each of us a Female, that they might punctually fulfil the Duties of Hospitality; we refused them the most politely we could possibly, not being able in Conscience to do Honour to their Presents. We disposed ourselves in order for our Departure

ture the next Morning ; but we were obliged to defer it, two of our Company being disordered in the Night by the Palm Wine that they had drank, though they had made no Debauch in it more than the rest. Exhausted as we were by fasting, a Liquor much less strong would have seized upon our Heads.

Our two sick Brethren proposed to us to stay amongst the Negroes ; I know not whether the Temptation of amassing Gold Dust would not have made us take this Resolution, if *Monneville*, who did not value his Life if he could not return to pass it in *France*, had not represented to us, that we should find a certain Death in the neighbouring Villages, which we already talked of pillaging at the Head of our Negroes. Since having neither Sabre nor Fire Arms, our Courage would only serve to make us be pierced with a thousand Arrows, the Moment that our Negroes gave Way, which would inevitably happen at the first Onset. He was in the right ; and besides this, our Gold Dust would not have help'd us to reach *Judda*, without
which

which it would have been wholly useless to us. We passed therefore the whole Day following in reposing ourselves, and we did not depart till the Morning after.

We could have wished that some of the Negroes would have escorted us only half a Day's Journey ; but the Devil a one was there that durst advance with us to the first Village through which we were to pass, as it was there that their most dreadful Enemies dwelt. Our good Negroes pressed us to take each of us a Bow and a Quiver of Arrows, which we refused to accept, and in which, according to my Opinion, we shewed some Prudence. As it was our Business to excite the Compassion of the Negroes through whose Villages we were to pass, we should have done very ill to appear there with Arms.

They gave us to understand by the Sun, that before it would set we should arrive at the terrible Village, and that we should frequently meet with Water in our Way. We carried with us therefore only some dried Fishes, which we

eat about Two in the Afternoon under some Palm Trees which we had discovered at a great Distance, and which our two sick Men did not reach without great Fatigue. One of them especially was so ill, that we were obliged to support him to assist his walking the remainder of the Day, which slackened our Pace, and prevented us from arriving at the Village by Day-light.

We assisted our Patient to march tolerably enough till about Ten o'Clock; when the Damp of the Night struck him, and threw him into so high a Fever, that we were obliged to carry him upon our Clubs laid across the rest of the Night, stopping continually to rest ourselves. As long as he was in the least sensible, he was incessantly imploring us not to abandon him. When it was Day, we found ourselves unhappily in an open Plain. This Observation made us redouble our Efforts to carry this poor Wretch still a quarter of a League farther, that we might gain a little Valley, where we judged that we should at least be under Covert from the Sight of these formidable Negroes,

groes, in whose District we still imagined we were.

We remained there till Nine o'Clock in the Morning, when the Heat of the Sun drove us from thence. We did not know which Way to turn to find a Shade. Besides our two sick Men, *Monneville*, who had never walked Barefoot, had his Feet all torn miserably, and being scarce able to support himself, he said to us with a false Tranquility that proceeded from Despair; Gentlemen, adieu, I wish you a good Journey; as to me, I shall remain here. I am resolved to die in the Sun, I shall be sooner dispatched, and languish less than in the Shade. There was amongst us a vigorous strong *Parisian*, named *Roland*. I proposed to him to follow me, and to assist our sick Men in spite of themselves. He consented to it. We left the rest there for two Hours, after which we returned to them each of us with a Bundle of Reeds and Herbs that we had fetched from the Banks of a River, which was at some Miles distance upon the right.

Our Design was to make a Kind of Umbrella to cover our Companions, and preserve them from the Rays of the Sun, and particularly him whom he had carried so long. Our good Intention was useless to him, we found him expiring, and his two Companions upon their Knees, weeping and praying to God for him and for themselves; so thoroughly were they perswaded that we should never return, and that they must immediately follow him.

Our Return did not appear to give them any great Pleasure. Their Resolution was taken; they were tired of struggling against that Fate, from whose Rigour they saw no Appearance of being able to escape. The Destiny of the dying Man alone seemed worthy of Envy to them. He is happy, cried *Monneville*, pointing to him: Now he defies the Beasts, the Negroes, the Rage of Famine, and we are still exposed to all those Evils. As he was ceasing to live, added he, he was conscious of his Happiness. He recovered his Senses for a few Moments, which he employed in returning Thanks to
Hea-

Heaven for his own Deliverance, and in pitying us ; he saw that our being more robust served only to make us longer miserable.

Do you know, continued he, what this unhappy Companion of ours exacted from us as he was dying. I have no longer any Inquietude but for you, said he ; I hope that Heaven will accept of the Pains I have suffered as an Atonement for my Crimes, and I shall die satisfied if you will promise me to execute what I am going to say : In the Name of God, suffer my Death to be of Service to you ; do not wilfully perish with Hunger in these Desarts, where you have only three or four Days Journey to proceed. Spare not my Body ; you may feed upon it in a Moment, and carry with you the rest.

You arrived, Gentlemen, pursued *Monneville*, as he pronounced these last Words, and you have seen him expire ; if this kind of Support is agreeable to you, we can make you the same Offer, for we shall not survive him long. So abandoned a Despair roused me into a
real

real Passion against *Monneville* ; I reproached him with his want of Courage, and told him that I should find a Way to force him to follow us.

We made a Grave not very deep, as we had only our Hands and some Sticks to make it with : It was sufficient, however, to contain the Body. We placed a Cross over him, which I made of his Staff. This was his Mausoleum. The Bark of the Tree that had served him for a Hat, and the Sleeves of his Shirt, were employed to make a Sort of Stockings and Shoes for *Monneville*, who followed us after this with more Facility, and we made up to the River which I had discovered with *Roland*.

We resolved to follow its Course, that we might not wander too far from the Sea, and in hopes of sooner finding some Village of Negroes there than farther up the Coast ; as in effect two Hours after we perceived one upon the Left ; we took the Path that led to it, being perswaded that we should sooner excite their Compassion than their Appetite in the Condition to which we were reduced,
but

but eight or ten Negroes, who met us, spared us the Trouble of going thither. These unpolite *Africans*, instead of receiving us graciously, set up the most dreadful Cries, and pursued us, shooting their Arrows for above an Hour.

Their Obstinacy in pursuing us with their Arrows, some of which might have reached us, made me lose all Patience: I would have run up to these cowardly Enemies, but they were much too nimble for me; they had, however, done us no other Harm but terrifying us. After this disagreeable Rencontre, we regained our River without any Obstacle, and having gone about two or three Leagues from this Canton, we passed the Night by the Side of the Water upon the Sands, where we made our Supper, each of us of about a Pint of Water. However little Solidity there is in that Element, we found that it had the Virtue of appeasing in some Degree the Rage of Hunger.

It does not indeed produce a very sound Sleep. Not being able to rest, I left my three Companions, and passed a

Part

Part of the Night in search of some Trees that I might have eat the Leaves. For the Punishment of my Sins I found none, and I was ready in my Turn to give up all Hopes, when I reflected that we could not be very far distant from *Cape Coast*, where at least we should be in the Hands of Enemies who would treat us according to the Law of Arms, and exchange us upon the first Occasion.

Roland, as full of Courage as myself, instead of sinking under his Misfortunes, endeavoured to preserve his Life. It struck also into his Mind that we were near *Cape Coast*; he communicated his Thoughts to me, and told me that he believed we might arrive there the next Day, if we departed by Moonlight without waiting for the Dawn. I was entirely of his Opinion, but could not wake one of our Companions, which was the sick Man, whom with such Fatigue we had brought so far. He was old, and by Consequence stood in need of more Repose than we did. It was not worth our while to have been so unwilling to disturb him, since he was dead and not asleep,

asleep, which we did not perceive till the Day broke.

He was the Son of a rich Trader of *Rouen* ; he first went to Sea in Quality of a Surgeon, after which he quitted the Lancet to turn Privateer, and lay his Bones thus in *Guinea*. As to him, more patient than any of us, he only feared Death as it abridged his Sufferings, which he thought could not be too long nor too cruel : It is I, doubtless, who have drawn all these Evils upon you, said he to me in private, from the first Day of our Misery, when he saw us in Danger of perishing in the Woods ; it is the Misfortune of having associated yourselves with me, that now swallows you all up in the Punishment of my Crimes.

I endeavoured to give him Consolation, by telling him, that few amongst us had held a very regular Conduct in their Youth, and that our Profession was seldom embraced but by those who were incapable of exercising any other. No, no, resumed he, I am the only Criminal, a Wretch that Divine Justice ought to punish. Judge me yourself, my dear Chevalier ,

Chevalier, when you have heard my Offences.

I began from the Age of Sixteen to deserve what I now suffer : I made Love to a young Heiress, whom I pursued less out of Inclination for her Person, than for the Fortune she was one Day to possess : I had a Rival who was preferred before me ; I resolved to revenge myself, and so easily found Means to do it, that I had not Leisure to reflect upon the Consequences of the Action I meditated. My Rival was not upon his Guard against my Resentment ; he thought I had acquiesced with Patience, as I had ceased to see my Mistress without coming to Reproaches with him ; therefore, when I made them my Visit, eight Days after their Marriage, they received me with Politeness, and even with Friendship. Far from suspecting my base Design, the young Bridegroom took me into his Closet, where, finding myself alone with him, I stabbed him with a Poniard.

I immediately went from the House, and going hastily out of the City, I
gained

gained the Forest, where I remained concealed till it was Night, which I employed wholly in endeavouring to make off; but in the Disorder that agitated me, I lost my Way so entirely, that when the Dawn appeared I was still in the Wood. As I was looking out for some Cottage, where I might go to provide myself with Victuals, I discovered three Horsemen, who came directly to me; to avoid them, I fled into the thickest Part of the Wood, but one of them alighting followed me with a Pistol in his Hand, and soon seized upon me. I imagined myself already upon the Scaffold. I escaped however with only the Fear of it, for they called out to me, *Your Purse, or your Life.*

These Words reassured me, and I ceased to fly. Whilst this honest Gentleman was making me empty my Pockets, his two Companions called to him, and he conducted me before them: I related my Misfortune to them, and throwing myself at their Feet, I conjured them to save me. They looked upon each other laughing, and one of them asked me, if I had an Inclination
for

for their Profession. I protested to them, that I should look upon myself as the most fortunate of Mankind if they thought me worthy of exercising it with them. They told me, that they could not grant my Request, till I had first given them Proofs of my Ability, and had put myself in a Condition to follow them, by desiring the next Passenger to lend me his Horse.

I understand you, Gentlemen, replied I to them, give me what may make me respected at a greater Distance than my Sword, and you shall see that it was not an unreasonable Pride that made me presume to aspire to the Honour of [being your Associate: They gave me immediately the only Fusil they had, and posted me in a convenient Place to make my Request. They left me there, and retired to the Distance of five or six hundred Paces, not without having advertised me, that I must not enterprize any thing, when there appeared above two Men together.

I was

I was a considerable Time in my Ambuscade, without seeing any Thing but poor Wretches, whose Defeat would have afforded me neither Honour nor Profit. After this there passed before me two Gentlemen well-dress'd, and whose Horses would have been very suitable to me: Unfortunately for me, they had the Look of Men that would defend themselves well, and they were followed by four or five Men a-foot. It was not till towards Noon that there presented himself a Horseman alone, who came from the Side where my new Comrades were concealed. They let him pass by them with Impunity, to leave to me the Glory of dismounting him. This was a Tradesman of a little neighbouring Town; who, I suppose, wanting to reach *Rouen* before Dinner, rid pretty fast.

I prepared to take Aim at him, when I knew him to be one of my particular Friends. The Intimacy I had with him was so great, that if I had run no risque by returning to the City, I should have joined with him against the three Robbers. But as that would have been my in-

inevitable Ruin, I stopp'd him with the most dreadful Tone of Voice. I commanded him to alight, and lay flat upon the Ground; then, after having robb'd him, I mounted upon his Horse, and rejoined the three Judges of my Action as in Triumph.

I flattered myself with having deserved their Applause, and I was not a little surprized with the cold Reception they gave me. One of these three illustrious Robbers, said to me with a fierce Look; What do you design to do with this Man? Did you spare him to set the City in alarm, by the Recital that he will not fail to make of the Accident that has happened to him? Your Penetration doubtless did not reach so far as to foresee, that in half an Hour there is not a Person in *Rouen* but will know that we are here, and what we are doing.

Struck with these Reproaches, I returned upon the Gallop to my poor Friend, and shot him through the Head with a Pistol. This Time, however, I imagined I had done my Duty, and expected

pected to see my Judges highly satisfied with me: Another Blunder, said they to me! Had you any thing to fear from this Man whom you had disarm-ed? Neither did I fear him, Gentlemen, replied I, since I have killed him. You ought, returned they, to have dragg'd him into the Wood, and there dispatch'd him with your Sword. In the first place, because a Shot is heard at a Distance, and may put these Travellers upon their Guard, who may be following him who was killed; and secondly, because when you dispatch a Man in the Forest, you spare yourself the Trouble of dragging him thither to conceal him from the Sight of the Passengers.

I begg'd these Gentlemen to consider that I was but a Novice, and consequently they ought not to be surprized if I was guilty of Mistakes. At that Instant several Merchants passed by, and saw the whole Exploit that I had performed, They spread abroad the Report in the City, which join'd, to the Assassination that I had committed the Evening before, caused so many Archers
to

to be dispersed in search of us, that we were obliged to leave those Parts.

We retired towards *Caen*, into the Castle of a Gentleman, where it appeared to me that they thought themselves in Safety; though several of the Neighbourhood frequently visited there. They all behaved so frankly to each other, that I soon perceived they were well acquainted. After some few Days, there arrived eighteen other Cavaliers at the Castle, who assembled there upon an Advice that they had received from *Rouen*, that a Gentleman, named *La Motte le Bailly*, a rich Merchant of *Caen*, was to set forward upon such a Day, with a large Sum of Money that he had drawn out of the Hands of his Correspondents; one of his Footmen, who had some Intercourse with us, having had the Goodness to inform us of it, adding to his useful Information, that he believed his Master designed to go over for Refuge into *England* upon the Account of Religion, and that it would be easy for us to strip the House in the mean Time.

I imagined within myself, that we should go and wait for the Merchant on the Road, at his Return from *Rouen*; but this they did not think proper to do, our Troop being too strong, and consequently too insolent, to content themselves with a silent Robbery. They formed another Resolution: As soon as they knew that the Family of this Citizen expected him in the Country, and that his faithful Valet had caused us to be advertised of his Arrival, together with his Son, who usually accompanied him, we all mounted our Horses to repair thither.

It was not entirely dark when we enter'd the Court. They had placed me at their Head by Way of Trial of me. The Master of the House advanced to meet us, and asked us very politely, if he could be of any Service to us; I made him no Answer, but with a Pistol that laid him dead upon the Ground; and his Son and Wife were treated in the same manner. They spared the Domestick who had served us so well, with some of the others, whom we preserved to prepare our Supper;

we also spared the Life of one of the Children of Monsieur *de la Mothe*, and that because we were informed he was deaf and dumb; nevertheless that Child afterwards remembered some of the Troop who were confronted with him, and was the principal Occasion of their receiving the Punishment they deserved.

I remember that the Compliments made me during the Supper by this illustrious Brotherhood having inspired me with Gaiety, I seized upon a Parrot which fluttered about in its Cage, and cried Murder! Murder! Words which she had often heard repeated; I cut off her Head, and thrust it into the Mouth of the dead Citizen, repeating some brutal Jest, which acquired me fresh Applauses. A young Man of my own Age, named *Grachi*, upon this said to me, with an ironical Tone, that it was very fortunate to have received from Nature such a happy Disposition as I expressed.

By this Stroke of Raillery he displeased the whole Company, who concluded from thence that the young *Grachi*,
with

with his Sentiments of Compassion and Humanity, would never make his Fortune in this Profession, and they condemn'd him unanimously not to proceed in it. His Father, as if this Reproach had dishonour'd his Son, begged them to forgive him: He promised to harden his Heart, if possible to inspire him with more Resolution, and for an Expiation of his Weakness, he forced him, upon the Spot, to drink a large Glass of the Blood of the Murder'd.

It was thus that this wretched Companion of my Miseries made me his Confession in the Bitterness of his Heart. I had resolved not to mention any thing of his Life to *Monneville* and *Roland*, lest they should be more careless of him, but his Death prevented him from wanting their Assistance any longer. *Monneville*, when he saw us cover him with the Sand, sigh'd deeply, and looking dejectedly upon us, It is not worth the Trouble of doing this twice, said he to us, leave a Place for me by this unhappy Wretch; I ought now to go the first, by endeavouring to go farther I shall only embarrass you, and even perhaps

prevent you from reaching to *Cape Coast*. Strive therefore, Gentlemen, to arrive thither alone, and do not ruin yourselves obstinately by endeavouring to preserve me.

These Words of *Monneville* affected us all, and we told him, that if he gave himself thus up to Despair, and would not make a last Effort, we would all remain with him, and let ourselves perish like Cowards. I strove, however, to give him Consolation, by protesting to him, that if he would recollect all the Strength that he had left to follow us, we would abandon ourselves to the first Negroes that we met, and perish together by their Hands, or obtain Assistance from them. *Monneville* at length submitted, and we departed, after having drank copiously of the Water of our River.

Exhausted as we were, we began our Journey again, with a full Resolution of proceeding, and we walked tolerably well, till Eight or Nine in the Morning, when we found some Negroes employed, as we supposed, in making

a kind of Dam upon a large River. Whatever their Cruelty might be, we were in a Condition to disarm it, and, as if our Necessity alone had given us Strength, we ceased to feel it as soon as we saw these Men, from whom we might receive Assistance.

It was not in our Power to chuse in what manner we would salute them, we fell down fainting at their Feet. They gave us in the first place a little boiled Rice to eat, which doubtless saved our Lives. After having examined us with Attention for above a Quarter of an Hour, without speaking to us, they all applied themselves again to their Work, except two of the most antient, who remained with us as if to guard us. The first Effect that the Nourishment produced which we had taken, was to remove a Giddiness that had seized upon us all; and afterwards it gave us so great a Drowsiness, that in less than Half an Hour we all three fell into the most profound Sleep.

Some Hours after we awaked on a sudden, at the Noise made by the Arri-

val of a new Troop of Negroes, at the Head of whom was the Chief of the Canton, to whom they had gone to give Notice of our Arrival. Conceive, if it is possible, our Astonishment and our Joy when he saluted us, and said to us in *French*, *From whence are you ?* we thought we heard the Voice of an Angel. I informed him in few Words of what Nation we were, and the Misfortunes that had happened to us ; upon which he exhorted us to take Courage, assuring us, that we might think ourselves in as great Safety with them as if we were in *France*.

To recover us out of the Surprise he perceived we were in, he told us, that he had been carried off and sent to *Paris* when he was but ten Years old ; that he had been baptized there, at the Parish of *St. Sulpice*, and held at the Font of Baptism by Madame the Dutchesse *de Berry*, then very young ; and that he had afterwards been sent back to *Judda*, to the *French* Factory, in hopes that he would be of great Assistance to their Trade ; but that he had soon quitted all to rejoin his Countrymen again, with whom

whom, tho' very ignorant, he was better pleased than with the *French*; because, said he, I find it better to live as a Master among the Stupid, than as a Slave with Men of Sense.

He was perfectly well acquainted with *Paris*, he named all the Quarters of that City to *Monneville* and *Roland*, as well as several Families particularly known to the last. This generous Negroe, glad of having an Opportunity to shew us that in *France* he had learnt how to behave himself, did all that we could have expected from the most humane of the *French*. He caused a kind of Biers to be made, upon which we were carried by his Order to his Village, which was at a considerable Distance from thence.

That Evening he regaled us with *Cabris*, or Wild Goats, and the next Day he ordered the best of six or seven young Hogs, which he had bought to stock his Canton, to be killed on purpose for us. It was our own Fault that we did not stay with him till we were entirely recovered, but that we could

not persuade ourselves to submit to. The Impatience of being again at Sea seized upon us the Moment he had told us that we had but two small Days Journey from thence to *Cape Coast*, and that the Negroes, through whose Villages we were to pass, were not of a cruel Nature.

After five or six Days of Repose and good Food, we demanded our Audience of Leave of him, and this noble Godson of Madame the Dutchess of *Berry*, seeing us absolutely determined to depart, gave us a young Negroe to conduct us, and to carry our Provisions for the whole Road. This was not yet all, he made us a Present of half a Pound of Gold Dust, and what charmed me the most, as to my own Particular, was, that he lent me a good Sabre, which he had brought from *Judda*, desiring me to send it back by his Negroe as soon as I arrived there. He advised us to travel more in the Night than in the Day by reason of the Heat; and as a Return for all this good Usage, he only exacted from me a Promise to make his Compliments to five or six Valets and Cham-

Chambermaids of *Paris*, with whom he had been intimately acquainted, he said, and whose Names and Surnames he repeated to us a thousand Times.

We met, in our first Day's March, with one of those three great Rivers which he had told us were between his Village and *Cape Coast*; and as *Monneville* could not swim, I was obliged to take him upon my Back, for we were both very near being drown'd; which was the Reason that, to get him over the other Rivers, we fastened some Pieces of Wood together, and in that manner made a little Float, which *Roland* and I pushed before us as we swam.

We passed near several little *European* Forts, in each of which there was only a Garrison of four or five Soldiers, their small Number keeping them always upon their Guard against a Surprise; they all refused to receive us, and even threatened to shoot us if we approached them. Our Guide also, in our Route, shewed us a Mine of Gold*.

M 5 All

* *St. George de la Mine*, about three Leagues from *Cape Coast*.

All the Negroes that were there had Rings of Gold upon their Toes and their Fingers; they were even platted into their Hair. The little Furnaces in which they made these Rings, Golden Hearts, Half-Moons, and other such little Toys, were under Ground, and in very bad Order, and their Workmanship appeared but indifferent. They scarce had any Resemblance of the Things whose Names they bore. They gave us of them in Exchange for Gold Dust, very faithfully, and almost Weight for Weight.

We arrived at length at *Cape Coast*, where we had so much wished to find ourselves, without foreseeing the new Disaster that attended us there; for we fell once more into the Hands of the same *English* Captain that had taken us Prisoners. When he saw us again he thought he beheld a Vision, not being able to imagine that we could have escaped the Dangers he had exposed us to by setting us ashore. Certainly, said he, shewing me to Monsieur *Cazali*, if we don't put this Devil into the Mouth of a Cannon we shall never get rid

rid of him. You would not gain by doing so, replied I to him in *English*; at least if you had done it before, you would have lost my Ransom, and that of my Companions, which we have brought you: We then presented to him our whole Quantity of Gold Dust, which he took without any Ceremony, and after we had related to him all the Pains and Miseries that we had suffered, during the dreadful Journey that he had so cruelly made us take, he sent us to the Dungeon, without discovering to us the further Punishment he intended for us.

Monfieur *Cazali* sollicitated strongly in our Favour. He represented to the Captain, that our two Companions who had perished so miserably had paid sufficiently for us, and that he was persuaded that he would have the Generosity to let us enjoy at Liberty a Life which had been spared by the Negroes and the Wild-Beasts. Our Advocate had no Success, for we remained fifteen Days in the Dungeon, and at length were released from it by a Folly, which alone would have been sufficient to have thrown me there, if Mankind was not
so

so corrupted as they are, and so familiar with Vice.

Monfieur *Cazali*, whose first Care had been to provide us with Nourishment capable of re-establishing us, by sending us in private the most excellent Meats, of which he often deprived himself, came to us one Day, and made us a very long Visit in our Prison; and perceiving that I had only the wretched Remains of my blue Shirt, which scarce half covered my Body, he sent me the Moment he returned home one of his Shirts by a Negress who attended upon him. This Lady acquitted herself of but one half of her Commission; she contented herself with making her Master's Compliments to me, and adding great Civilities of her own, but she kept the Shirt.

When she was returned home from the Prison, Monfieur *Cazali* asked her several Questions concerning me, and he judged by the Answers that she made him, that she had not given me the Shirt. He asked her why she had done thus: She told him insolently, that the
Shirt

Shirt belonged lawfully to her, and that I had made her a Present of it for her Favours. She maintained this Invention with so much Steadiness, that Monsieur *Cazali* very piously believed her, tho' she was at least fourscore.

He thought this Adventure so extraordinary, that he could not forbear imparting it to some *English* Officers, who diverted themselves with it highly. They afterwards related this marvellous History to the Captain, who laughed at it still more than they did: To procure himself a new comic Scene at my Expence, after Supper they all conducted this beautiful Beldame to me in Ceremony; several Flambeaux preceded her, like an *Indian* Bride whom they were accompanying to the Nuptial Bed. I saw plainly that all these gay Gentlemen came thither to entertain themselves at my Cost, and without knowing then why they took this Diversion, I entered with a good Grace into their Pleasantry. I rallied with them upon the Charms of the *Belle Brunette*, and what I said to them that Evening put them in so good a Humour, that Monsieur *Cazali* came
the

the next Morning to tell us we were at Liberty, and that we should be conducted to *Judda*, where they even permitted me, if I pleased, to carry my young Mistress with me.

Judda, upon the Coast of *Guinea*, is a neutral Port in Time of War. No large Vessel can enter it, they are obliged to remain in the Road, because there is a Bar, or a kind of Sand-Bank, which prevents their Entrance. This Bar occasions such Surges that they must be observed with great Care not to perish even in a Shallop. The Vessel which carried us to *Judda*, went thither to buy Negroes. When we were in her Shallop, I perceiv'd that the Sailors, as they passed the Bar, worked her very ill; I would have steer'd, but they prevented me, and we overset in a Moment.

There were always several Negroes there, who being used to these Sorts of Accidents, and certain of gaining some Recompence, throw themselves into the Water, and go to the Assistance of those who stand in need of it. Two of them immediately helped me to save *Monneville*, then giving my Attention to *Roland*,

land, my other Companion, I saw him at a great Distance from me, and I thought he seemed to be drowning. I immediately left *Monneville* in the Hands of the two Negroes, and I hastened to the *Parisian*, whom I caught by the Hair, and it was with great Difficulty that I kept him above Water till they came to my Assistance, for he had lost his Senses, and did not help himself in the least. We thought him dead when he was upon the Land; however, by Degrees he recovered his Spirits, and in four and twenty Hours he was entirely recovered.

We had great Reason to be sensible that we were at last with our Countrymen. Monsieur *de Chamois*, the Governor of the *French* Fort at *Judda*, behaved to us with a Tenderneſs, that was more like a Father than like one of the same Nation only. He had us washed, shaved, and bathed, furnished with Linnen, Cloaths, and Money, and gave us the Use of his own Table as long as we remained there. What did he not do to engage us not to leave him! With what Ardour did he offer to contribute towards our raising a considerable Fortune there! It is certain we should have
been

been of great Service to him in that Country.

He took the Trouble himself of teaching the Military Exercise to several Negroes, with whom he wished to have assisted his Ally the King of *Judda*, who was oppressed by his Neighbours; but he wanted Officers at the Head of his Negroes, without which they would be but wretched Troops. He made no Efforts to detain *Monneville*, when he knew upon what Occasion, and with what Orders he had quitted *France*; but as to *Roland* and myself, he declared to us in positive Terms, that he would not let us escape so soon.

Near three Months passed before any Occasion presented itself for our putting to Sea again, and I almost despaired of quitting this Country, when a Privateer of *Martinico* came to anchor in the Road of *Judda*. It was a Vessel called the *Brave*, of six Guns, the Captain of which was named *De Gennes*. There were aboard her several Privateers of *St. Domingo*, who knew me; and when they learned I was there, they came with
their

their Captain to desire me to join with them ; which I promised them to do, even in spite of *Monsieur de Chamois*, if he endeavoured to oppose it.

I expected, in effect, that this Governor would have attempted putting an Obstacle to it ; nevertheless, *Roland* and myself had no sooner demanded his Permission than he granted it, testifying to us, with Politeness, the Regret he felt at it. He exacted from us, however, one Thing, which we could not refuse him ; which was, to lend him our Assistance for an Expedition that he meditated ; after which he consented to our Separation, provided that, in our room, they left him at least one Man of the Equipage.

Roland, more prudent than I, offer'd himself to stay, which gave great Pleasure to *Monsieur de Chamois*, because this *Parisian* was a very brave Fellow, of great Experience, and who could be of considerable Assistance to him. What engaged *Roland* to take this Resolution, was, that the Hazards he had run at Sea, and especially the last, which I had
just

just saved him from, gave him a Dislike to that Element. The Acquisition of the Gold Dust of the Negroes, tho' more slow, appeared to him preferable to the Expectation of those fortunate Chances of the Privateer Business, which few have the Happiness to meet with.

In effect, he succeeded so well in his Affairs at *Judda*, that in 1719 I saw him pass through *Nantes*, with a Treasure of near eighty Pounds of Gold Dust, which he was carrying to *Paris*, where he designed to settle himself in an advantageous Post. He was extremely pleased at meeting me there; he was never satisfied with repeating to me that I had saved his Life; and I could not excuse myself from receiving from his Liberality a Pound of Gold Dust, which was then worth several hundred Livres. I have since heard that he lives at *Paris* in great Affluence and Tranquility.

To return to *Monfieur de Chamois*; he exacted from us, that we should go to make a Descent upon *Princes Island*, I know not for what Reason; for not long before

before it had been sacked together with the Island of *St. Thomas* by *Monfieur Parent*. *Princes Island* is almost directly under the Line, and belongs to the *Portuguese*; we arrived thither in seven Days; we landed two Leagues from the Town, conducted by a Mulatto, the Son of a white Man and a Female Savage of that Island. He knew the Country, and *Monfieur de Chamois* had given him to us as a Guide; he managed our Route and our Time so properly, that we advanced to the Entrance of the Suburbs without being discovered.

We were spied there by some Negroes, who alarmed the Place: We found plainly, that without this Surprize we should never have carried it, upon account of the Smallness of our Number, since fifty Citizens stopped us above half an Hour upon a narrow Bridge, where we were obliged to pass. They made this Resistance only to give the rest of the Inhabitants Time to retire to the Woods with the best of their Effects; for the Defenders of the Bridge had no sooner given way, and taken their Flight promiscuously, but we made ourselves Masters

Masters of the Town without Opposition. The Inhabitants, who had shut themselves up in the Citadel, abandoned it in the Night; so that the next Morning we marched into it without striking a Blow. We found there eight Pieces of Cannon, which we spiked and threw over into the Ditch.

Monfieur *Parent* had fo thoroughly ruined the Inhabitants of this Island, that we could draw nothing from them by way of Contribution; therefore, having occupied their Houfes for fome few Days, while they lay in the Woods, we fet Fire to them, that Monfieur *de Chamois* might know, however, that we had kept our Promise to him. We refolved afterwards to go upon the Coaft of *Brazil*; but before our Departure from this Island, we began to have a Taffe of what Fortune deftined for us in this Voyage. In attempting to carry off fome Flocks of Sheep, feveral of our Companions were taken by the Inhabitants, and murdered fo cruelly, that we refolved to revenge their Death. Unfortunately the Enemies that we had to deal with were fo nimble, that they
escaped

escaped us when we imagined we had them safe, and their Parties were continually surprizing some of our People; add to this, the Heats of the Climate, still more difficult to support than the Fatigues of our Incurfions. Several of our Companions fell ill, Part of them died upon the Island, Part of them at Sea; so that we lost at least twenty Men, by attempting imprudently to revenge three or four.

From thence to the Coast of *Brazil* we were kept so long out at Sea by the stormy Weather, that our Water began to fail when we arrived there; therefore our first Care was to find out fresh Water. For this End we landed two Nights together without finding any, which made us resolve to take it in the Day in some uninhabited Part. This did not succeed; we were perceived, and repulsed every where.

The greatest Harm the *Portuguese* did us was, that having seen us in the Day examine the Entrance of a little River, and making no doubt but we designed to land there in the Night, they

they laid an Ambuscade for us, and at the third Voyage that we made thither, they carried off our Shallop, and ten of our Comrades, whom they surprized, were massacred, without a Possibility of our assisting them.

After this Misfortune, we were for three whole Months the Sport of Winds, sometimes drove beyond *Rio Janeiro*, sometimes towards *Buenos Ayres*, and when we expected to have refreshed ourselves there we were immediately brought along the Coasts to *Cayenne*, where we at length got into Harbour, all of us very ill, having been for a considerable Time reduced to drink each of us only half a Pint of Water in four and twenty Hours, and at length to have nothing but our Sails to suck in the Mornings, when they were moistened with the Dew.

Being unable to keep the Sea, we resolved to retire to *Martinico*, as soon as we were something recovered. Before we arrived there, we met in our Way Monsieur *Dugue*, a Captain of a Privateer of *St. Domingo*, who, with a gay
fresh

fresh embarked Company, was taking his Route towards *Angola* *, on board the *Francois*, a Vessel of eight Guns. We spoke to them, we related our Distresses to them, and, as I knew *De Gennes* was going to careen, I accepted the Proposition that *Dugue* had made to take me aboard.

Monneville was far from wishing to follow me. He was so fatigued with the Sea, and the Misery he suffered, that he was not to be known almost. He conjured me with Tears in his Eyes not to quit him, but to conduct him to *France*, assuring me, that he had what was more than sufficient to make me live happy with him, and offered to share his Fortune with me; but I was not yet tired enough of the Sea to accept of his Offers. All that I could do for him, was to desire *De Gennes* to seek an Opportunity for his returning into *France*, and to depend upon my Payment of every Thing that my Friend might agree for. He arrived safely in his native Country, and many Years after

* Upon the Coasts of *Africa*, about ten Degrees Southern Latitude.

after I had the Pleasure of seeing him happy in the Bosom of his Family.

Dugue had the strongest Company I had ever seen in a Privateer, and his Vessel was an excellent Sailor. I found myself, therefore, in the midst of Companions, who having at least as good an Opinion of themselves as I had, and as strong a Disposition for Action, promised soon to make me Amends for the unlucky Expedition I had been upon. We did not go so far as the Coasts of *Africa* before their good Intentions were put to a Trial. We met off *St. Helena*, where we designed to put in for Refreshment, an *English* Ship of thirty Guns.

We disposed ourselves to board her, and she to avoid it. They fired upon us for above two Hours, and killed a considerable Number of our People; the unfortunate *Dugue* was amongst the Dead, and I was declared Captain upon the Spot. I immediately gave out my Orders for grappling; and the long Resistance of the *English* having animated us against them, together with the Death
of

of our Chief, we fought with so much Eagerness, that when they struck there was scarce one Man left who was in a Condition to defend himself.

The excessive Desire I had to revenge myself on the *Portuguese* for what they had made me suffer, was the Occasion of my proposing, in my little Council, to return into *America*, and cruize upon the Coast of *Brazil*. My Advice was unanimously approved, when I made them observe the Difficulty there was to dispose of our Prize any where but at *St. Domingo* or *Martinico*; and when I had represented to them how seldom the Privateers made their Fortunes upon the Coast of *Africa*, where they met with almost as many Men of War as Merchantmen, and where there was no commodious Place for their Retreat.

When we drew near *Brazil*, we sent six of our People, with some of the *English* to *Petit Goave*, to sell our Prize, and seeing these little Islands again, where two Months before they had refused us Watering, I made Descents

VOL. II. N upon

upon them, which the Fishermen who inhabited there could not prevent. We put all to Fire and Sword, and threw into the Sea a prodigious Quantity of dried Fish which we found there, and in which all their Wealth consists. During the Night we passed entirely a-cross the River of *Janeiro*, to take in Wood and Water at the Island of *St. Ann*.

Tho' this Island is very small, not being much above a League in Circumference, yet there is near the Middle of it a fine Reservoir of fresh Water. We saw there Birds of a most extraordinary Colour; their Bodies were of a very bright Red, their Wings and their Tails of the finest Black upon Earth. After this we approached the Continent, and continually making Descents, we ruin'd the Plantations, and set excessive Price upon the Liberty of those Prisoners who were able to redeem themselves.

We carried off amongst the rest, about twelve Leagues from *Rio Janeiro*, a Captain of a *Guarda Costa*, his Wife, two Daughters who were Women, a *Carme*, and several Slaves. The *Carme*
was

was Brother to the Captain, and had conveyed himself thither from his Convent in *St. Sebastian* *, by exprefs Orders from their good Mother, who was willing, before ſhe left the World, to have the Conſolation of ſeeing her two Sons together, and giving them her Benediction. This pious Mother, after having divided to each his Portion of her Goods, was taking her Leave of them, when we aſſaulted her Habitation. The firſt Fuzils that we ſhot interrupted the mournful Ceremonial of their Adieus, and a ſilent Fear ſucceeded to the loud Cries and Complaints with which the Houſe had reſounded.

No Perſon ſeemed to pretend to oppoſe us, but a young Woman of more Spirit than the reſt, who endeavoured very unpolitely to have clapped the Door againſt us, but unluckily for her a Muſket Shot ſoon ſent her to keep the good old Woman Company. The *Carme* in an Agony fled into the Garden. The Captain, who had alſo eſcaped there,

N 2

im-

* The Capital of the Province of *Rio Janeiro*.

immediately fired at us, without perceiving that we had seized upon his Wife and his Daughters. As soon as his Eyes were struck with that Spectacle, and that he took notice we were preparing to set fire to the House, he ceased to defend himself, and submitted with a good Grace. The Monk made more Ceremonies; he summoned us first in the Name of Heaven to spare his Life, then, as if he had distrusted obtaining his Pardon in that manner, he soften'd in a Moment, prostrated himself humbly at our Feet, and conjured us by the hallowed Candle, with whose Light his Mother's Soul was then flown, and which he still held in his Hands.

Judge not of me by my Habit, cry'd he to us; I am a Priest, Gentlemen, do not imbrue your Hands in the Blood of an Ecclesiastick, a Religious, a *Carme*. I demand nothing from you but my Life; grant it me out of Compassion, or rather for your own Interest. I am thoroughly acquainted with this Habitation, and I offer myself to discover to you every thing that is of Value, and worth

worth your carrying off. At so pathetic a Speech we re-assured him, upon Condition that he kept his Word, which he did not fail to do. He opened all the Locks to us, saying, Take, Gentlemen, all is yours. He pronounced these Words with so much Ardour and Frankness, that it was impossible to doubt but he sincerely renounced all earthly Possessions.

We were obliged to him for many Things, which without him would have escaped our Discovery, and particularly twelve Negroes, whom he made us take in a Place where we should never have thought of searching for them. They made no Resistance, being fully persuaded, like the Ass in the Fable, that since they must be Slaves, it was indifferent to them who was their Master.

As it is difficult to satisfy all Parties, the generous Procedure of the *Carme* disgusted his whole Family, who thought him too liberal at their Expence; his Sister-in-Law particularly, a little passionate and hasty by Nature, made her

Invectives in very plain Terms. Would you believe it, Gentlemen, said she to us when they were aboard, that that Creature who was killed was the Companion of this Reverend Father, who had the Insolence to bring her to my House, tho' he came there only to receive the last Blessing of his Mother!

She was continuing her Elogy of the Monk, when her Husband imposed Silence upon her, to make us his Excuses for her Sally of Passion. You see plainly, Gentlemen, said he, that 'tis her Anger that has blacken'd the Character she gives of my Brother. He is a Rascal, I acknowledge it; but it ought not to have been told for our own Honour, and that of Religion. But be not scandalized at what you have heard; the Religious here do not resemble him who has been described to you; they are learned, virtuous, zealous for the Faith, and always ready to seal it with their Blood.

The good *Portuguese* said nothing but what was strictly true, but he did
not

not add, that in this new World there was also a great Number of the Monks ignorant, idle, and debauch'd, and who had only chose the Convent to live with Impunity in Luxury, Plenty, and Sloth. He did not confess to us what we very well knew, that in that Country he who names a Monk, names a Man powerful, absolute, haughty, independant ; a Man dreaded by the Great, respected and almost adored by the Populace, who have neither the Sense nor the Courage to shew themselves scandalized at his Conduct.

As it was not the Morals of our Prisoners, but this Ransom that was of Consequence to us, we obliged them to write to the Governor of *Rio Janeiro*, whose Relations they were, that we demanded of him for their Liberty a certain Quantity of Flour, Sheep, and Brandy ; that if we did not receive these Provisions in four and twenty Hours, or if there came the least Vessel out of the Port, the Captain and his whole Family should answer for it. I presume the Degree of their Kindred with the Governor was not so

near as to give him an hereditary Right, for he perform'd our Command most punctually, notwithstanding the Severity and Harshness of the Conditions we imposed upon him.

On our Side, we had no sooner received the abundant Supply that we had demanded, than we set our Prisoners ashore, very much satisfied with our Behaviour. The Captain especially testified, that he was less touched with the Liberty he recovered, than with the Regard and Respect we had all shewn to his Wife and Daughters. As to them, when they fell into the Hands of the *French*, and of *French* Privateers too, I am satisfied they did not expect such Moderation. In effect, I know not whether the so much boasted Continnence of *Scipio* was much superior to what we did in this Conjunction.

As to the *Carme*, he had no great Reason to praise us. About an Hour before he left us they play'd him a Trick, which I had no share in, and which I disapproved extremely. Some
of

of the Privateers, for their Amusement, treated him as *Fulbert* did the Lover of *Heloise*. I blamed them excessively, and yet I could not help laughing with them when the Surgeon, whom I had reproached the most particularly, told me, with the greatest Coolness in the World, that this Cure would be an Honour to him, that the Operation had not lasted two Minutes, that he would answer for the corporeal Recovery of his Patient, and that there was great Reason to hope for the Spiritual, which without this Remedy must have been desperate.

The Governor of *Rio Janeiro* was irritated to the last Degree at our Insolence; and looking upon the Law that I had imposed on him, of furnishing us with Provisions, as the greatest Affront, he resolved upon my Ruin, and thought of nothing but Revenge. He communicated his Design to the four Captains of *Guarda Costas*, and setting a Price upon my Head, he desired them to proclaim, that he would give four thousand Pieces of Gold to the Person

that should bring it to him. What Difference, good God! I could not now get Sixpence for it.

I was so exalted with this signal Honour, that the *Portuguese* condescended to do me, that I very frequently gave them Opportunities of attempting to gain the Prize proposed. We continually made Descents, and in our Pillages we saved none but the Negroes; then, when we had a certain Number of them, we hoisted the *English* Flag, and carried them to some Distance to dispose of. The Deceit was soon found out, and without respecting the blue Flag they very frequently fired upon us. They laid so many Snares for us, that my valuable Head was at length very near taking a Journey to *Rio Janeiro* without the rest of my Body.

The Governor having learnt that we were between his *Capitainie* and that of *Spirito Santo*, sent several Frigates out after us, who making off to Sea, flattered themselves with surprizing us upon the Coast, and hemming us in. The
Cap-

Captain of the first that we perceived, behaved in a Manner that would perhaps have made a Dupe of any other Person as he did of me. He drove before him two wretched Vessels, called *Semaques*, each with a Company of about ten or twelve Men, who no sooner saw us than they seemed to use their utmost Efforts to avoid us, and yet they suffered themselves to be taken.

When the Frigate appeared, in its Turn, its Sails all in Disorder, like a shattered Vessel, its slow Motion, and seven or eight Men who appeared upon it, seemed to exert themselves also to gain the Shore and escape us; I thought, like an Ass, that it was a third *Semaque*, as easy to take as the two others, and that it was sufficient to go with our Shallop, and see if it was no richer a Prize than they were. The Calm which then reigned, and which made it troublesome to bring our Vessel up with them, was the Occasion of my taking this Resolution.

I got into the Sloop, therefore, with
about

about a Dozen of the Privateers, and we soon overtook them. The too great Eagerness of the *Portuguese* saved us. Instead of letting us board them without discovering themselves, they rose up with Precipitation as soon as we were within Pistol-shot, and made a Discharge upon us of two or three hundred Musket-shot, which put us into great Confusion. Our Shallop too was very near being overset, by the sudden Motion we made to veer about upon this Surprize. We were still farther from expecting this, as at our Approach three or four of those who had appeared upon the Frigate, had hoisted up the *French* Flag, as if against the Endeavours of their Companions, and had called out, *Vive le Roy de France*, telling us, that they were Cannoniers of *St. Malo*, and that they had only entered among the *Portuguese* upon account of Monsieur *du Gua Trouin's* having left them sick at *Rio Janeiro*, after the Expedition in which he had pillaged that Province, to revenge the Treatment given to Monsieur *le Clerc*.

They

They were indeed *French* Cannoniers; but the Traitors, after having betrayed their Country, desired nothing more than to make its most cruel Enemies triumph over it. It is easy to suppose in what Terms we complimented them as we made off, whilst these Betrayers making use of their Address gave us an Answer with their Cannon, as long as we were within Shot, and scarce ever missed us. We did not doubt but this Frigate was supported, and getting off as fast as we could from her, and from the Coast, by the Help of our Oars, we endeavoured to avoid the Consequences of so well concerted a Stratagem. In effect, in less than an Hour we discovered another Frigate, which waited only for the Wind to have attacked us.

Such a Conspiracy against my Head did not remain unpunished. I made new Descents and new Ravages, till having been informed that whilst we amused ourselves thus, a rich Vessel, returning from *Angola*, was peaceably entering into the River of *Janeiro*. We changed our Battery, and resolved to
cruise

cruise before its Entrance : We had soon Reason to applaud ourselves for this Determination ; for we had not been there above a Month, when we perceived a Vessel, which we could not reach till it was within Sight of the Coast. It was of thirty-six Guns, returning from the *South Sea*, and most certainly was not in the least expected, as since, seven Years that it had been gone to the Eastern Islands, it had never been heard of, and was supposed to be lost.

The Captain was a young Man of undaunted Courage, who desired nothing more than to come to Action, tho' he had but a Company of a hundred Men. The Sight of their native Country, to which they had brought back great Riches, after many Labours and Dangers, inspired them all with an heroick Courage. During more than half an Hour, that at two different Times we were upon their Deck, it was impossible for us to gain the least Advantage over them. They continually made us give Way, and retreat in Confusion to our Vessel. There was
then

then a Suspension of Arms on both Sides, as if to take Breath ; after which, when we returned to the Charge, we found an equal Resistance.

Filled with Anger and Confusion, we redoubled our Efforts, and resolved the third Time rather to perish than to draw back. I had remarked, that after the first Discharge of their Fire-Arms, the *Portuguese*, as we did, trusted to their Courage, and almost all fought with their Swords. I spoke of it to my Companions, and ordered to fix themselves each upon a particular Man as much as it was possible. This succeeded perfectly for us, because our Enemies had more Valour than Skill, and combating with Fury, and consequently without being upon their Guard, they were guilty of no Faults but what were immediately made use of. Their Number then began to diminish more than ours, and tho' they still fought with the same Obstinacy, we were satisfied that the Victory would be ours.

The Captain, at length, seeing there was no farther Resource, threw himself into the Sea, in hopes to swim to Shore, and save at least what he had upon him : But he received a Musket-shot in the Water, which broke his Thigh, and he was obliged to submit and name himself to save his Life. The rest of the Company demanded Quarter at the same Time. The Bravery of these *Portuguese* converted into Esteem the Hatred we had felt for the whole Nation. We had the Wounded dressed, and took the same Care of them as of our own Companions.

As the Captain was undressing for that Purpose, who was then speechless, we found several Pacquets of small Pebbles, carefully lapped up, and fastened in his Shirt ; and as I had no great Understanding in such sort of Merchandize, I looked upon them attentively, without guessing what they were, when I heard a weak Voice, which, from amongst the Heaps of the Dead and Dying, called out to me, *Diemainte, Diemainte, Signor Fortouna, Fortouna.*
This

This was an expiring *Portuguese*, who fearing that our Ignorance should make us despise and lose so precious a Booty, had the Goodness to make known the Value of it. It was a considerable Quantity of rough Diamonds. There was at least to the Value of three hundred thousand Livres, if I may judge of them by the Share I had. I sold them at *Nantes* in 1713, Part of them to Monsieur *de Bonnefond*, Commissary at *Brest*; and Part to Monsieur *de Pradine*, Brother to that Monsieur *Cazali*, whom I have mentioned.

I kept for five or six Days about twenty of these *Portuguese*, who did not vouchsafe to die of their Wounds. We used our utmost Efforts to engage them to stay with us, and reimplace those Companions whom we had lost. These *Portuguese*, so brave and so worthy of being *Volunteers*, were not tempted to accept the Quality; they rather chose the obscure Conditions of Citizens of *Rio Janeiro*; we set them ashore then five and twenty Leagues from that City, giving them their Cloaths, Provisions, and

and more Money than would be sufficient to carry them thither. We did still more; seeing how rich our Prize was, we gave them so large a Quantity of their Merchandize as would preserve them from Want for some Time.

Their Captain, who was cured of his Wound, felt himself so touch'd with our Procedure, that addressing himself to the *Portuguese*; No, said he to them, it is not the *French* that we ought to look upon as our Enemies, it is the Ministers of the Court of *Lisbon* who have ventured to declare War against so generous a Nation: Then turning himself to us, he protested upon his Honour, that he was less sensible of the Loss of his Riches than he was of our Generosity. He added, that in Consideration of him, I should now be as much beloved in the City as I had been hated. I rather chose to believe him upon his Word, than to try if he had that Power over the Minds of his Countrymen.

I carried my Prize to *St. Domingo*, where we sold it for eighteen hundred

dred thousand Livres. Some Time after, in the Beginning of 1712, I went over to *Martinico*, where I learned that Monsieur *de Phelypeaux*, who was the Governor, was raising Troops for an Enterprize against the *English*. It was resolved to seize upon *Antigoa*, or at least to ravage it. Monsieur *de Cassart* was the Person who had the Conduct of this Expedition. He took for this purpose five of the King's Ships, and three thousand Men out of his Troops, to whom Monsieur *de Phelypeaux* engaged us to join ourselves, to the Number of three hundred Privateers, as we were then in *Martinico*.

The *English* were upon their Guard, and we attempted fruitlessly to make a Descent upon *Antigoa*. Monsieur *de Cassart* was piqued to the last Degree, and being unwilling it should be said, that he had made such an Armament in vain, he fixed upon *Montserrat*, where the *English* were too weak to prevent our Landing. They had, however, formed eight or ten little Retrench-

trenchments, which we were obliged to force before we could arrive at the Town. Monsieur *de Cassart* drew up his Army in Order of Battle, and order'd the Privateers to be under regular Command, the same as the other Troops.

We kept our Ranks then gravely at the first Retrenchment, which we carried with some Resistance. We were disgusted with this Manner of Fighting; and making a Jest of the Phlegm with which the Soldiers of a Battalion discreetly count their Steps, and think only of measuring their March, whilst their Enemies have Time to disorder the Symetry of it by their Muskets, we let ourselves be carried away by our Impetuosity at the second Retrenchment, and leaving the Colours, the Drums, and our General, to run irregularly upon the *English*, we drove them from Retrenchment to Retrenchment, and entered promiscuously with them into the Town.

Monsieur *de Cassart* then found himself obliged to hasten his Pace. When
he

he entered the Place, he gave us the severest Reprimands. He represented to us, that, besides the Guilt of Disobedience, we had exposed ourselves to the Danger of being cut to Pieces by our imprudent Vivacity. However, as he saw his Eloquence contradicted by the Event, and our Rashness justified, it was spoke of no more, and the Remainder of the Day was employed in pillaging the Town, and ruining the Inhabitants.

The Booty was carried in common on board the Ships, to be divided when we came to *Martinico*, so that the Pillage of the Town was performed at first with more Regularity than we had observed in the taking of it. But the Death of one of our Privateers was very near making this War, which we carried on so quietly against the *English*, degenerate into a Civil War amongst ourselves. This Privateer presenting himself to enter into a House that made a good Appearance, a *French* Officer, who was at the Door with some Soldiers, would have hindered him. The
Priva-

Privateer asked him, by what Right he seized upon that House, when neither he nor his Companions had contributed towards taking the Town. The Officer, instead of answering him, bid his Soldiers keep him off, and whilst this poor Wretch turned back to call us to his Assistance, he received two Stabs with a Sword, of which he fell down dead upon the Spot.

Some of the Privateers saw this, and informed us of it. We immediately began to assemble ourselves, and to send for those who were at a Distance. Happily Monsieur *Cassart*, informed of the Motions we made, run to us, and found us ready to attack the *French*, who prepared themselves to receive us valiantly, being at least ten to one. The Presence of the Chief did not disarm us; and perhaps he would have been forced to put himself at the Head of his little Army against us, if he had not offered us Satisfaction, by promising to deliver up to us the Officer of whom we complained. This Promise appeased us, tho' it was
never

never accomplished. The Officer disappeared, and the Affair was forgot. Not long after this, having acquired so considerable a Fortune by the *Portuguese* Prize, I resolved to take a Voyage into *France*, where I arrived safely in *March*, 1713.

F I N I S.





Just Printed and Published,

By T. GARDNER, at Cowley's-
Head *opposite St. Clement's Church*
in the Strand.

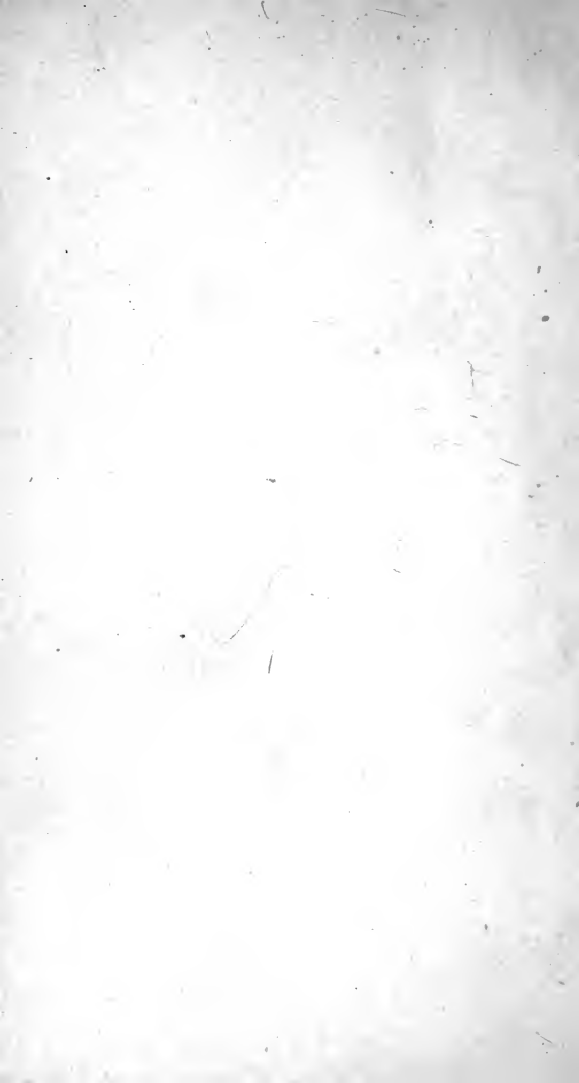
I. THE FEMALE SPECTATOR. Which
is published Monthly, Price One Shil-
ling; and which is one of the most Useful
and Entertaining Undertakings now on foot.

II. The FORTUNATE FOUND-
LINGS: Being the Genuine History of Co-
lonel M——rs, and his Sister Madam Du
P——y, the Issue of the Hon. Ch——s
M——rs, Son of the late Duke of R——d.
Containing many wonderful Accidents that
beset them in their Travels, and interspers'd
with the Characters and Adventures of sever-
al Persons of Condition in the most polite
Courts of *Europe*. The Whole calculated
for the Entertainment and Improvement of
the Youth of both Sexes. Price Three
Shillings bound.

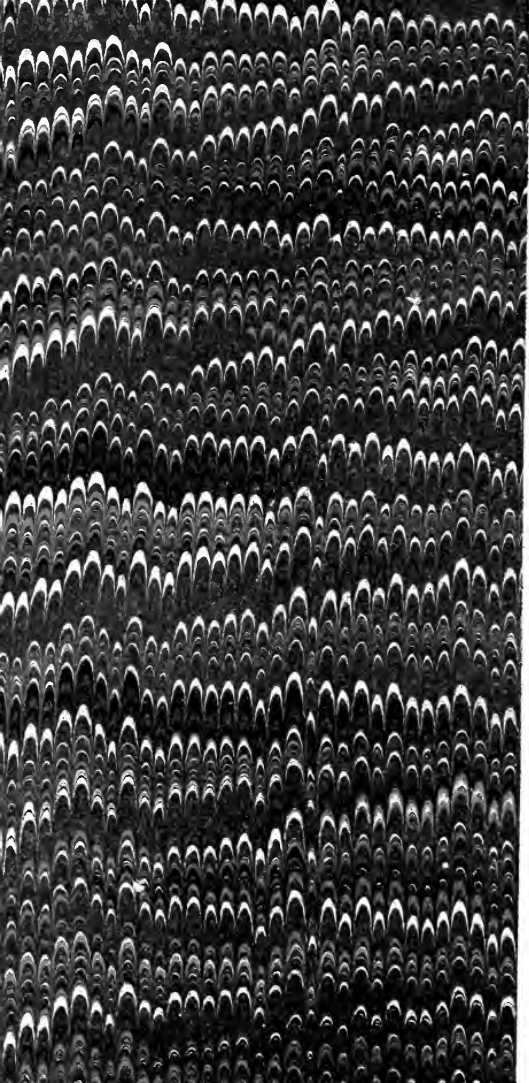
III. SELECT NOVELS. Never before
published. Translated from the *French* of
Madame de Gomez. Price Three Shillings
bound.











Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: Nov. 2005

Preservation Technologies
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thompson Run Drive
Cranbury, NJ 08512 PA 18151
(724) 773-2111

